



我的美女 总裁老婆

霉干菜烧饼◎



我的美女 总裁老婆

霉干菜烧饼◎

My Wife is a Beautiful CEO 1 to 50

Table of Contents



1.

1. [Chapter 1: Mutton Skewer Seller](#)
2. [Chapter 2: Money is Needed to Find a Prostitute](#)
3. [Chapter 3: Initiative](#)
4. [Chapter 4: Reaction](#)
5. [Chapter 5: What I Hate The Most](#)
6. [Chapter 6: Infuriate](#)
7. [Chapter 7: Police Beauty Chief](#)
8. [Chapter 8: Chrysanthemum Tea](#)
9. [Chapter 9: You're Shameless](#)
10. [Chapter 10: A Stain In One's Life](#)
11. [Chapter 11: As A Guest](#)
12. [Chapter 12: I'm Really A Mutton Skewers Seller!](#)
13. [Chapter 13: Marriage](#)
14. [Chapter 14: A New Home](#)
15. [Chapter 15: My Wife Is A Rich Woman](#)
16. [Chapter 16: The Father-in-Law Appears](#)
17. [Chapter 17: Even A Pig Is Cuter Than Him](#)
18. [Chapter 18: Charming Rose](#)
19. [Chapter 19: Objects Like Bullets](#)
20. [Chapter 20: Monkey King And His Mate](#)
21. [Chapter 21: Stupid Woman](#)
22. [Chapter 22: Moment of Life and Death](#)
23. [Chapter 23: The Young Lady's Threat](#)
24. [Chapter 24: Delivering Food](#)
25. [Chapter 25: Taking A Job](#)
26. [Chapter 26: I Am Used To Never Looking Back](#)
27. [Chapter 27: Bohemia](#)

28. [Chapter 28: I Am Proud Of Selling Mutton Skewers](#)
29. [Chapter 29: The Chirpy PR Department](#)
30. [Chapter 30: CEO](#)
31. [Chapter 31: Pledge](#)
32. [Chapter 32: Big Bro](#)
33. [Chapter 33: Truly Too Caring](#)
34. [Chapter 34: Who's The Crude One?](#)
35. [Chapter 35: Wait For Me Tonight](#)
36. [Chapter 36: Visiting The Chen Residence](#)
37. [Chapter 37: Mistreatment](#)
38. [Chapter 38: Ruined Door](#)
39. [Chapter 39: Two Choices](#)
40. [Chapter 40: Cooperate With The Investigation](#)
41. [Chapter 41: Looking Back With A Smile Brings A Hundred Times The Charm](#)
42. [Chapter 42: Breakfast Time](#)
43. [Chapter 43: I Must Reward Myself Well](#)
44. [Chapter 44: Three](#)
45. [Chapter 45: Negotiation](#)
46. [Chapter 46: Mister Has Great Insight](#)
47. [Chapter 47: You're Even An Action Movie Star](#)
48. [Chapter 48: Two Types Of People Who Are The Scariest](#)
49. [Chapter 49: Accidental Meeting In The Hallway](#)
50. [Chapter 50: Colleague](#)

Chapter 1: Mutton Skewer Seller

In the evening, in the farmers' market located in the west region of Zhong Hai city, there were numerous noisy pedestrians and vehicles indifferently passing through. Vegetable leaves and dirty water were strewn all over the ground. There was an enormous amount of different fading store signboards, and occasionally there would be some single-colored neon lights lit up. There were workers returning home, children that finished school, elderly buying groceries, and the many different travel-worn passersby, causing the gray dusty sky to seem more and more depressing.

Perhaps within a metropolitan city like this, such a region was the stain that people looked down upon the most, a region they wished never existed.

By a wall next to an intersection, was a man who was leisurely and contentedly doing what others viewed as shameful.

This was a young man covered in oil and grime, selling mutton skewers. He was sporting a white vest, coffee-colored pants, and a pair of stiff blue plastic slippers.

The young man's hair was messy, but had a rather mature and handsome face, if one took a closer look, one would notice this was a man with backbone. It's a pity that no matter how he looked, the ladies walking along the street wouldn't even pay him a glance, because, he was just a mutton skewers seller.

The young man placed the mutton skewers he just cooked to the side. With the hot weather, grilling was easy but selling was hard. 50 cents for two skewers was considered cheap, but after a whole day, he only earned a little over 10 dollars, barely enough to have 2 meals.

However, the young man didn't seem to be dejected by this, he instead had a relaxed and satisfied expression. He sat down on his stool, looking towards the crowded street, as if such a view was the prettiest scenery.

"Old Li, it's about time you paid for what you agreed upon 2 days ago!" A high-pitched male voice suddenly appeared from the side.

The 3 approaching males didn't look above 20 and were dressed like gangsters, with upright hair, silver chains, holey jeans, scraggy faces, and a cigarette in their mouths.

Old Li was a peddler selling deep-fried snacks right beside the young man. Similarly, due to the hot weather he didn't have much business and was on his seat with a worried expression.

"This....." Old Li showed a bitter face, "My Young Master, please be patient. With this hot weather, how am I able to pay without any business....."

"Listen here Old Li, don't take a yard after being given an inch. If it wasn't for big bro Feng protecting you, this stall of yours would've been wrecked long ago." A henchman said in a threatening, yet flattering way.

The hooligan called big bro Feng seemed extremely pleased, he patted his henchman, and said, "Today's protection fee, you can choose to pay or you can choose not to pay. I must get the money either way. Otherwise, I will wreck your stall now!" with that said, he picked up a skewer of sausage, took two big bites and threw the remainder on the ground.

Old Li was stuck without a way out and tightly gripped the small stack of notes in his pocket, considering whether or not to spend it like that. The money was meant for his wife to see a doctor, how could he bear to use it as a "present" for these rascals!?

"I'll pay for him." The man from the mutton skewers stall suddenly walked over, and fished out a few notes from his pocket, not even amounting to 100 dollars. He handed it over and indifferently said: "This is all I have, Old Li is getting on in years and urgently needs money, you guys should accumulate some good karma."

The little hoodlum squinted his eyes and laughed, then took the notes and passed it to his henchman behind, "Yang Chen, you want to pretend to be a good person, but you haven't paid your own protection fee!"

Yang Chen creased his eyebrows, lamenting in his heart about why these fellas were not properly studying at their age. Why be a hoodlum, but as he wasn't their father, it wasn't his position to say anything. He also didn't want to stir up trouble, so he dully said: "Tomorrow, I will pay tomorrow."

“Good, I’m not an unsympathetic person, everybody should cooperate. I protect your businesses and you pay me money as a matter of fact..... I will come tomorrow to collect then.” After speaking, the little hoodlum and his two henchmen strutted towards other stalls, bringing them grief.

The eyes of Old Li had already reddened, he bitterly looked towards Yang Chen, “Little Yang, why do you trouble yourself? You are always helping me pay those thugs, how can I let this go on....”

“Old Li, don’t say such a thing. When I just arrived and wasn’t used to life here, I probably wouldn’t even have a friend to talk to, if it wasn’t for you. You are my benefactor, and this is my way of repaying you.”

“You kid..... What should I say to you.....” Old Li seemed to understand that he couldn’t convince Yang Chen and could only sigh.

Yang Chen didn’t mind and laughed, it was a dull yet sincere laugh. As if the extortion earlier didn’t affect his mood, “By the way, how is your wife’s illness?”

Old Li’s eyes were filled with gratitude, “It’s all thanks to you for giving me the money to have an operation for my wife. Right now she only needs to go for a few more check-ups, take some medicine and then she’ll be fine.”

“Oh, that’s great! I wish her an early recovery.” Yang Chen satisfyingly nodded.

Old Li gave a bitter laugh, “Little Yang, the money you lent me will definitely be returned, if I’m unable to return everything before I die, my daughter will carry on the debt..... Alas, if it wasn’t for me, that 100,000 dollars of yours can definitely be used to open a nice shop. You wouldn’t need to come here and sell mutton skewers, and wouldn’t need to endure those hoodlum’s torment.”

Yang Chen curled his lips, “I somewhat enjoy such a way of life, selling mutton skewers isn’t bad, it is simple yet able provide enough for meals.”

“You are too.....” Old Li was a little depressed as he said, “Little Yang, you are only 23 or 24 years old, other youngsters of your age are either studying in university, or diligently trying to build a career. Right now you don’t even have a girlfriend, are you planning to sell mutton skewers forever? You aren’t worried, but I feel worried as I watch you.”

Seeing Old Li genuinely express worry for himself, Yang Chen unconsciously

revealed a slightly bitter expression, it's not that he was not worried, he just never thought about it at all.

After the night fell, Yang Chen tidied his stall, and pushed the cart back to the crappy apartment he rented.

This was a small apartment that has been around for who knows how many years. The rent for each month was only 100 dollars. It's only because nobody wanted to live here that it was this cheap. Unlike other people who worried about the house falling apart, Yang Chen decided to move in the moment he saw how cheap it was.

Yang Chen's house had very simple furnishing, it was mostly second hand goods others dumped away. There was a bed, a cabinet, a chair, and a TV that could only watch some basic channels.

After pushing the small cart into his small house, Yang Chen gazed upon the calendar hanging on the wall. He checked the date, suddenly remembered something, and promptly ran to the toilet.

In less than 5 minutes, he took a cold shower, and got out of the bathroom naked. His skin was a healthy yellow colour, his well-proportioned body wasn't very conspicuous, but under careful observation, one could perceive a reserved feeling of masculinity.

Walking towards the cabinet beside the bed, Yang Chen scratched his head in distress while looking at the pile of disorderly clothes. He picked out a few and finally put on a yellow shirt, a pair of light linen pants, and wore the same plastic slippers.

After leaving his house, Yang Chen hurried towards the west region's most prosperous street, which was also the shabby west region's only respectable street, named "Bar Street".

The nightlife of feasting and pleasure-seeking was all around, there were colorful skirts, and all sorts of different perfumes. The moment one entered Bar Street, the city's atmosphere swept through.

Yang Chen didn't openly stare like some undisguised and unscrupulous young men, and also didn't secretly peep at the thighs of beautiful ladies on the street

that the others were drooling at.

The bar's neon lit signboard wasn't considered dazzling, the bar that could only be considered mid-sized contained a mysterious air, brilliantly colored rose shaped lights were decorated on the signboard.

After entering the bar, Yang Chen walked to the side of the counter in a routine manner, and sat at a corner.

"Big bro Chen, you're here." The young bartender wearing a vest noticed Yang Chen, and revealed a warm smile. At the same time, he brought out a cup of water, "Big sis Rose has been waiting for you for a long time."

Yang Chen gave him a smile, then took a sip from the glass, "Big sis Rose isn't angry right? I returned home a little late, so I arrived late."

"Not angry, not angry." Little Zhao smiled, it was as if the few pimples on his round face were smiling at him as well. With an imploring tone he said: "Big bro Chen, when you have time please teach me. What sort of method did you use that you even managed to pick up our big sis Rose? You know, if the people in Zhong Hai who were interested in our boss made a queue, they could queue from the west region till the sea. For so many years I've never seen the boss so in love with any other man. Yet today, just the question of whether you're here yet, had been asked no less than 5 times....."

"Don't speak drivel, there's nothing going on between me and big sis Rose....." Yang Chen helplessly, and unenthusiastically replied.

Little Zhao had an expression of 'I won't believe that even if you kill me', then sighed, "Geez..... big bro Chen, to be honest, this cold demeanor of yours is too high level, to be able to pick up a world-breaking beauty like our lady boss. Which man wouldn't stick to her everyday? There's only you, who comes only once in a while and even lets a beauty wait for you. Otherwise why do people say that things that you cannot obtain are the best? This sentence is suited to be used on women....."

Right as little Zhao had an expression of a saint at romance and exaggeration, a charming yet dignified and intelligent voice appeared behind him, "Little Zhao, how many more times do you think your pay can get cut?"

As if he was shocked by an electric current, Little Zhao was dumbfounded. Once he returned to his senses, he immediately sidestepped and pretended to mix drinks, as if nothing happened, but the cold sweat on his forehead gave away the fear in his heart.

With an elegant modern qipao, her thighs were vaguely displayed through the slit to the side of her leg which released an arousing sex appeal. In addition her plump breasts, and an exquisite waist matched well with that smooth porcelain-like face that looked like a meticulous piece of art. On her shoulder were strands of light purple hair. This was a young lady with an appearance like she came out from a painting, as she leisurely walked towards Yang Chen.

[ED: Qipao –

]

Yang Chen smiled with both his face and eyes, looking right at the lady without a trace of awkwardness, and sincerely said, “Big sis Rose, you’re really pretty, happy birthday.”

§

Chapter 2: Money is Needed to Find a Prostitute

Hearing the praise, Rose slightly blushed, bit her smooth lips, and with a tone full of remorse she said, “What use is there being pretty? A certain someone seldom comes by, and even when it’s my birthday that person still arrives this late.”

Facing this sweet and charming lady, a tinge of lust welled up in Yang Chen, increasing exponentially due to her mesmerizing eyes looking at him, without any inkling of abhor. However, with a noble heart Yang Chen managed to suppress his wild desires. Restoring his tranquility, he said, “I don’t drink, and I’m also not good at saying words that make ladies happy. Moreover, I set up my stall everyday, and truly don’t have much spare time.”

Rose grudgingly glared at Yang Chen, “Don’t speak such useless words to me. Setting up a stall? What’s good about setting up a crappy lamb skewers stall? Even if you work yourself to death you won’t earn much money, if you really want to make money, come and be my housekeeper. The salary I’ll pay you every month will be 100 times of what you make from selling lamb skewers!”

Yang Chen bitterly laughed and said, “Big sis Rose, men don’t usually become housekeepers.”

“I’ve told you so many times, call me Rose, why are you always calling big sis, big sis, big sis, am I that old?”

Yang Chen could only compromise, “Alright, Rose, I was wrong. It’s just that, I somewhat enjoy my current lifestyle, for the time being I don’t intend to switch jobs.”

Unwilling to give up, Rose said, “You don’t have to be my housekeeper then, being my bodyguard will do right? Or, I could let you be the manager of the bar, I rarely supervise this place anyways, I usually let it be.”

Hearing these words, Yang Chen felt a little touched, of course he knew this woman truly cared for him, but he had his own stance. Since the day he met Rose, he decided not to get too intimate with this woman.

“Forget it Rose, I feel that selling mutton skewers is pretty good, the farmers’ market has quite a number of nice people as well.” Yang Chen lowered his head to drink his water, unwilling to continue on this subject.

Upon seeing Yang Chen’s stubbornness, Rose frowned, then angrily whispered to herself, “It’s only good if you become my man.....”

What she doesn’t didn’t realise was, the words that she said, that she herself could barely hear, were words that Yang Chen clearly heard, but Yang Chen knew that he must pretend that he didn’t hear anything.

No matter how dim the lights in the bar were, Rose’s face and physique still emitted an irresistible charm. However, from the moment Rose appeared, even when some people noticed her, they would only dare to take one glance before looking away. Some curious new customers asked the surrounding patrons who Rose was, and there was basically only one answer—— “Drink your liquor, don’t court death.”

Feeling a little defeated, Rose walked to the other side of the counter, sat beside Yang Chen, first poured a glass of whiskey for herself, then poured another for Yang Chen, rolled her eyes and rebuked, “Old ox, I know you’re tough. It’s fine that you are unwilling to stay by my side, however today’s my birthday, can you make an exception and drink a glass of liquor?”

Yang Chen hesitated for a moment, the truth was, it’s not that he can’t drink, it’s just that every time he drinks, the alcohol would cause disorder to his psyche. There were too many things he didn’t want to recall, which is why he needed to be calm. Therefore, to him, alcohol is poison.....

“Alright, but only one glass.” Harboring a tinge of guilt, Yang Chen is unwilling to utterly disappoint Rose, so he decided to accept. Silently hoping in his heart that nothing will happen, since it’s only a small glass.

Sure enough, Rose happily smiled, that smile resembled seeing snow for the first time. Under the dim light, her visage glowed with luster, entering Yang Chen’s eyes, it made his heart tremble again.

“Cheers.”

After clinking the glasses, Yang Chen raised his head and drank the ice-cold

liquid without any hesitation.

Rose made a 'gege' laugh, leaned forward, and pressed her body onto Yang Chen's chest and melancholily said, "Do you know, it has been 10 years since I last celebrated my birthday. Although there's no cake, no candles, no presents, not even a party..... there is an unromantic man like you to accompany me to a drink, I feel very contented....."

This woman's physique looked well-developed from any angle and caused men to drool. At this moment, Yang Chen distinctly felt two soft moldable lumps pressing against his thigh, gently stroking it, bringing with it a stimulating sensation.

Slightly lowering his head, he saw the slit of Rose's qipao, and the fairly discernible soft porcelain-like snowy skin. Below her exquisite ankles was a pair of fiery-red high-heeled shoes,

The intense visual stimulation along with fierce seduction aroused Yang Chen's male hormones.

When a man meets a woman, among hormones, the adrenal glands hormones' reaction, is the most straightforward evaluation of the woman. Evidently, Rose scored well in this.

Just as Yang Chen did his best to suppress his body's reaction, Rose finally stood up, gave him a crafty smile, as if she was a fox who succeeded in her plot, "This is good, my man, seems like your 'capital' is outstandingly robust huh....."

Yang Chen forced a smile, of course he knew what Rose was referring to. This woman, she actually peeped on him while she approached earlier.

"I can see that you can barely endure sitting here, I'm going to go entertain my other customers, if you don't want to stay any longer, you may leave." Rose left the seat in a natural and unrestrained manner, and walked towards the other customers.

The customers of the bar long ago knew that the bar's lady boss was very charming, yet they didn't dare to forgo their manners. This was due to receiving information that the woman's background wasn't simple at all. As a result, it was effortless for Rose greet her customers.

As a matter of fact, Rose's face contained a passionate smile. That extraordinary temperament was enough to cause the majority of men to feel intimidated, thus they could only look on from a distance. Also, they didn't want to reveal any notions of obscenity, as nobody courted a rebuff.

When Rose left, Yang Chen breathed a sigh of relief, and at the same time he silently mocked himself. For the last half a year that he returned to this country, he seemed to have changed quite a bit.

If it was the Yang Chen of the past, facing a mesmerizing lady like Rose who had affection for him, there wouldn't even be a need for her to seduce him. He would've thrown her onto a bed long ago without a care for whatever the consequences. In any case after the deed was done he could just leave.

However, he can't do that now, especially to Rose who can be considered one of his first friends in Zhong Hai, and to him, in his heart she was significant.

Although he only drank a small amount, the alcohol had already started affecting his mind. Yang Chen felt that his craving for alcohol had already been awoken, yet he didn't dare to drink in excess, the pain of recalling unwanted things after drinking is something only he understood.

However, seeing that his lower body still had a pitched tent, Yang Chen felt the need to vent some of his pent-up emotions, otherwise 'it' would be stifled to death. But of course, Rose won't do, once they have that relationship, it would be difficult for him to get away.

After drinking a cup of water, Yang Chen quietly left ROSE bar. When he left, within the eyes of Rose who silently watched him leave, was a sense of disappointment.

Outside the bar, Yang Chen looked around, before finally walking towards a small bar close by. There may be many prey in high-class bars, but the money in Yang Chen's wallet wouldn't be enough.

Chapter 3: Initiative

Soon after walking near this small bar, Yang Chen understood that he came to the right place.

The small bar's misty lights were vague yet dreamlike. All around; at the counter, in the corners, and even in the middle of the hall, there were couples with arms over each other's shoulders, embracing and hugging, the young men and women intermingled freely. Unrestrained and charming laughter continuously arose.

Yang Chen only got a few steps in, when a lady in heavy makeup and gaudy clothing approached him, her upper body was covered with only a rose-colored bra, while her lower body a black leather miniskirt. Holding an amber-colored liquor in her hand, she staggered and plastered herself onto him.

"Handsome, will you treat me to a drink?" The woman's voice was very coy, enough to make any man nauseated.

As it's been a long time since he came into contact with alcohol, the already somewhat hot-headed Yang Chen conveniently pinched the protruding tip of the woman's bra gently, the woman's whole body trembled immediately, then gurgled with laughter, "Handsome you're so nasty, pinching that place of mine the moment we met, if you ruin it by pinching, how are you going to compensate me....." On one hand rebuking with discontent, on the other hand pressing herself even closer, a pair of shining white arms already hooked onto Yang Chen's neck.

Yang Chen had a nefarious smile plastered on his face, he had not much interest in a woman like that, she seemed too easy. Yang Chen pushed the woman away from his body, "I have no interest in a drunk sow who only thinks of mating."

Apparently some parts of her brain was still sober, because when the woman heard "sow", her blood immediately started boiling, and she fiercely smashed the glass of liquor onto the ground. "Stinky brat, you must be tired of living! You

wait!” Done speaking, she angrily walked towards a pile of people at the corner of the bar.

Yang Chen suddenly had a nefarious desire enter his heart, it’s been a long time since he had come to this kind of place, and dealt with this sort of people. It seemed like today he could rely on the effect of the alcohol to relieve this pent-up desire.

After going to the bar counter to ask for a shot of vodka, a scorching heat began boiling inside Yang Chen, while his eyes revealed peculiar excitement.

There was no way of knowing how that gorgeously dressed woman managed to call in 8 men, all of them were well-built, had the vitality of a dragon and fierceness of a tiger. The moment Yang Chen finished his shot, they surrounded him.

The woman hugged onto the thick and solid arm of the large bald man who stood at the front, she pointed at Yang Chen and sharply called out, “Big bro! It was this bastard who treated me badly, help me beat him to death!”

The large man took a look at Yang Chen’s slim physique, and revealed a gaze of disdain. He then signalled two of his subordinates to make a move to teach Yang Chen a lesson.

The two men maliciously smiled as they moved forward, they didn’t intend to waste words with Yang Chen, and directly swung a sandbag-sized fist.

Yang Chen didn’t even bother looking, with a calm expression as if nothing had happened, he lifted both of his hands at the perfect timing and his palms collided with the two men’s fists.....

“OWW!!!”

The two big men screamed at the same time and fell to the ground, then unceasingly rolled about while holding onto their own hand.

This scene that took place in the bar seemed both strange and abrupt. Although fights and brawls often happens in this little bar, never before has this baldy’s group eaten a loss. Unable to resist, many people looked towards Yang Chen with curiosity.

The baldy saw that things weren't going as planned, and he couldn't help but frown. He cast a suspicious glance at Yang Chen, then crouched down and picked up the arm of his hurt subordinate. It was no big deal if he didn't see the arm, but after he did, his forehead immediately had cold sweat streaming down.....

The other subordinates who stood behind saw their own men being hit, and began raining curses, but before they moved up to attack, they were held back by the baldy who blocked them with his arms.

Without so much as an explanation, baldy bowed to Yang Chen after standing up, "Big bro is a great man with great magnanimity, this time us brothers have offended you, if there's anything big bro needs from us in the future, please don't hesitate to call out to us, hope to see you again!"

With that said, baldy had his confused brothers carry the two men wailing in pain out of the bar.

That woman felt that things were inconceivable, as they left the bar, she was still hooting about why he didn't help to vent her anger.

Baldy Hu glared at the woman, then said to his little brothers who were also bewildered, "Earlier, that person broke Fifth and Sixth brothers' arms with his palms, do you guys think you can beat him?"

Those few guys immediately regained their cool, the two light looking palms earlier actually had that much strength, if he wasn't expert then who was he? Immediately, some of them began flattering the baldy, saying things like boss had great foresight.

However, the baldy didn't pay attention to their flattering, he instead turned his head towards the bar, while deep in thought. It was unknown what went through his mind.

Meanwhile, Yang Chen who was still in the bar was unaffected. Seeing baldy and the others leave, the space at the corner of the bar was open, so he unhurriedly walked over, intending to carefully search for his "prey" for the night.

Because Yang Chen defeated baldy and his gang so easily, a sense of fear arose in the men and women present in the bar. Occasionally, several hot chicks would

send coquettish gazes at Yang Chen, but were ignored, and could only give up seducing him.

Right as Yang Chen was about to sit on the sofa, he realized that at a booth in the corner, there was a person lying down, and it was even a young lady.

With a mere glance, Yang Chen's gaze became heated.....

Under the dim light, the soft jet-black hair hung from the sofa down onto the carpet, a white one-piece dress wrapped over the beautiful curves, which were like soft and beautiful waves.

After moving closer, Yang Chen could smell an alluring body scent which brought with it a mix of jasmine and alcohol.

The woman seemed to be very drunk. Her fair hand held onto a wine glass, yet her body weakly leaned against the sofa lightly, and shifted about from time to time. That well-rounded butt of hers formed a captivating curvy line.

Yang Chen walked up to her, supported the woman up, and shifted away the messy hair covering her face, revealing a drunk and flushed pretty face.

What made Yang Chen astonished was, this woman's looks were actually prettier than Rose who he met earlier. Whether it was that beautifully sculpted face, or the cool elegance and allure from being drunk, either was enough to make any man lose himself.

However, a gorgeous beauty of this level also made Yang Chen feel perplexed. How could this kind of woman be a prostitute? But if she's not a prostitute, why would she drink with those people till she's dead drunk? Moreover with a lustful and ardent expression.

The woman seemed to have been drunk, without waiting for Yang Chen to ponder further, she casually grabbed hold of Yang Chen's shirt collar, then her tender and beautiful lips which were like fresh flowers came kissing.

But because she was unable to find the target, the woman's kiss only landed on Yang Chen's cheek, then slid away.

Yang Chen was stimulated by that ice-cold yet soft contact on his face to the point where he felt like he was burning all over. Seeing this beautiful and delicate

lady’s limpid expression, with a captivating appearance that anybody would want to take ownership of, he then thought. He himself wanted to indulge for a night, why think so much? Embracing the soft and delicate body with force, he fiercely kissed onto the woman’s fragrant lips.

“Wu.....”

The woman let out a low moan, seemingly bitter about Yang Chen barbarousness, yet seemingly joyful about having her tongue being wrapped around.

§

Chapter 4: Reaction

When the morning light shined its way through the mottled windows and into Yang Chen's home, Yang Chen swayed his head in a daze. He wanted to get up, but suddenly felt something soft wrapped around him.

Yang Chen who immediately turned clear-headed looked down, sure enough, it was the drunk woman he brought home last night.

At this moment a lotus-like arm hugged onto his waist. Beneath the blanket, a pair of plump breasts squeezed onto his thigh, that exquisite point of contact felt as smooth as velvet. A pair of white and delicate thighs unreservedly coiled around his lower body, faintly revealing that alluring butt line, with some traces of last night's indulgence.

Perfectly matching with the woman soundly asleep was that innocent and absolutely beautiful face, which made Yang Chen can't help but lament, among all the women he has met in his lifetime, this woman is definitely capable of entering the top 3.

Just as Yang Chen was lamenting this heaven-sent art piece of a lady's figure, out of the corner of his eyes, he abruptly saw that at the tail-end of the bed, there was a dry red bloodstain on the bedsheet!

His heartstrings being pulled, Yang Chen frowned as he looked at the woman who still looked indifferent, somewhat surprised. This blood obviously wasn't bled by him, but it was truly unexpected, a beauty that was that deranged was actually still a virgin.

Many things when thought after it happened would seem obvious at a glance, Yang Chen quickly understood, it was very likely that the baldy from yesterday drugged her. If it wasn't for him scaring of that bunch due to various causes, this beautiful black-haired lady would've been the baldy and gang's prey. It also had been because he drunk too much yesterday, as he did not notice this peculiarity even after getting on the bed.

Just as Yang Chen sat on the bed thinking of how to handle this situation, the

woman who slept on him finally woke up.

After the woman opened her eyes in bewilderment, she lightly lifted her head, and saw Yang Chen calmly looking at her.

The man standing in front was very unfamiliar, yet also felt familiar. In her nose, there was a heavy scent of a man's body and something else. Doing her best to think through what was going on, the disjointed scenes of last night surfaced in her mind..... The woman quickly understood how everything came to be!

After Yang Chen learned that she was not a prostitute, he was very curious as to what reaction this woman might have, screaming? Beat and scold him? Call the police? Or even extortion? If that were the case, Yang Chen wouldn't feel any guilt, she may do as she pleases. If it weren't for him, she would've been the cleansing tool for a bunch of men. If she had to blame she could only blame herself for not being careful, mistakenly trespassing a wolf's den.

However, the woman's *reaction* was mysteriously tranquil.

She unhurriedly sat up, under the dull sunlight, she got out of the blanket revealing that white jade sculpture-like sexy figure. The visual attack made Yang Chen's breathing turn deep and heavy.

On her body there were even lovebites, red imprints of spanking, and even some viscous remains from a man, these could let one's imagination run wild.

The woman got off the bed without the slightest bit of awkwardness, and even her fragrant lawn could easily be seen.

But it was precisely this type of indifference and tranquility, which made Yang Chen feel stifled in his heart, taking in a deep breath he then said, "I'm sorry."

At that moment the woman turned away to put on her underwear, hearing those words, she couldn't help but pause for a moment, but she did not speak or turn around, and continued putting on her clothes.

Yang Chen did not say anything more, but felt like there was a stone weighing on his heart, making it hard to breathe. It had been years since he felt guilt from doing a woman.

During those days, majority of women were merely a medication for his wounds, and simply not the same species that possessed their own thoughts to him. Suddenly, a woman he spent a night with made his heart feel perplexed and full of guilt, Yang Chen began to suspect whether he had been too laid back, and his personality softened.

In less than 5 minutes, the woman had already worn her clothes properly, tidied her appearance for a little, to make sure no one could see any peculiarity in her appearance. After that, as silent as before, she walked towards the door.

Yang Chen saw that she was leaving without a word, so he couldn't help but ask, "Do you know the way back? Do you want me to send you back?"

This time the woman did not even pause at all, she walked out of the room, and casually closed the door.

Yang Chen blankly stared at the door being closed, and couldn't help laughing bitterly. This woman was considered top quality amongst the women he had seen his whole life. Just as he was about to get off the bed, Yang Chen whose hearing far exceeded the ability of the average person, heard a sobbing sound, coming from the corridor.....

Seems like she still cried, however, she wasn't willing to let him see or hear it, unfortunately, she did not know he had hearing that far exceeded the average, so she didn't manage to evade him hearing.

Once he thought of how during that whole period of time that woman was forcefully withholding her tears, Yang Chen's feeling of guilt once again flared up.

o

After tidying up, Yang Chen remembered that he still had to open his mutton skewers stall. Although the stall doesn't earn much money, he always enjoyed being in bustling places where he can watch people come and go, the feeling of being immersed in an ever-changing world. Money doesn't matter.

After pushing his single-wheel vending cart to his spot, Old Li who had been selling his deep-fried sausages smiled at Yang Chen, "Little Yang, you came late today, did you have date or something yesterday?"

In his heart Yang Chen muttered, *there wasn't a date, but there was a bed,*

and in reality he dully replied, “How can there be such a thing? Don’t let your thoughts drift off, I just overslept.”

Old Li laughed, and with satisfaction he said, “My family’s Jingjing finished her internship and returned home, yesterday she even told me to remember the kindness you showed us. Little Yang, if it wasn’t for you, how can we possibly manage to afford both letting my wife see a doctor and providing Jingjing enough money to survive during her internship at that far away place?”

Old Li’s daughter, Li Jingjing, is the child he and his wife conceived late, their treasure. When she graduated from university, she went to another city for internship for two months, before returning home.

Yang Chen had met that girl twice, she’s classified as a jade-like beauty, however she’s his friend’s daughter, so he wouldn’t have ideas about her.

“Haha, remember what kindness? In the future when I’m out of cash to eat you can just let me freeload on a few meals and that will do.” Yang Chen jokingly said.

“Alright then!” Old Li suddenly nodded, “If you didn’t mention it I would’ve forgotten, my wife and Jingjing both said to invite you to our house for a meal to properly express our gratitude. Tonight it is then!”

“This..... Isn’t necessary right? Your family is having difficulty getting by on your own, what are you inviting me to have a meal for?”

Old Li pretended to be somewhat angry as he said, “How expensive can a meal get? Merely coarse tea and plain rice, Little Yang, if you don’t come you’re holding my family in contempt.”

Yang Chen was left without a choice, he couldn’t out stubborn this tough old man, so he could only nod in agreement, and Old Li delightfully smiled.

But right at that moment, a few hoodlum’s figures once again appeared in the market, spotting Yang Chen and Old Li, the leading little hoodlum evilly grinned.

Chapter 5: What I Hate The Most

“Yang Chen, have you prepared the money I let you prepare yesterday? My brothers are waiting for that money to go eat breakfast and have a drink.” Chen Feng swung a silver chain in hand in circles as he moved forward with a smile that was neither cold nor warm.

Old Li panicked, he stood in front of Yang Chen and called out, “Chen Feng, you people shouldn’t go overboard anymore! Even if your dad Boss Chen owns this area, what qualifications do you have to be collecting protection fees!? Boss Chen has long ago said that those who didn’t open a shop don’t have to pay protection fees, do you think we don’t know that!?”

Chen Feng’s father, Chen Dehai was one of the west region’s underworld bosses, otherwise Chen Feng naturally wouldn’t go around collecting protection fees absolutely unrestrained. At that moment, hearing Old Li use his father to pressure him, coldness abruptly surfaced in his eyes, “Old thing, who do you think you are..... You think I’ll be afraid of you just because you mentioned my father? That is my father, not your grandson! For me to collect protection fees is me thinking highly of you! Don’t refuse the toast just to eat punishment!

“You.....” Old Li only realized after he spoke that he nearly offended Boss Chen, after all those two are father and son, what is he in comparison? But he just couldn’t hold it in anymore. Just as he was about to help speak up on Yang Chen’s behalf, he was instead pulled back by Yang Chen who stood behind.

Yang Chen frowned, and rubbed his forehead as he faced this headache. After pulling Old Li back, he dully said to Chen Feng, “You’re called..... Chen Feng right? I’ll call you big bro Feng, don’t pick a quarrel out of nothing anymore. I as a person dislikes trouble, however, I don’t have cash on hand today, I’ll give it to you in a few days, you can return first.”

“Whew!” One of the subordinates loudly laughed, “Big bro Feng, this brat thinks he is the boss!? He thinks we will return just because he told us to?”

The other little hoodlums also wildly laughed, and even hooted “let’s teach this

brat a lesson.”

It was as if Chen Feng also heard the funniest joke in the world, but in his heart he was truly angered by Yang Chen’s words, he evilly smiled and said, “Yang Chen..... If you have the guts say it again, do you believe that I’ll cut your tongue off.....” At the end of those words, there was obvious killing intent.

Yang Chen’s uncaring expression suddenly turned a little cold, and as he gave Chen Feng a complicated gaze he said, “Do you know what I, as a person hate the most?”

“Wh.....”

Without waiting for Chen Feng to finish speaking, Chen Feng suddenly felt his whole body flying high in the sky! Immediately after, at the same time he felt a sharp pain on his abdomen, his body slammed into the roadside garbage bin with a “bam” sound! The remains of vegetables, leaves and fish covered his whole body, even his clothes were soaked by the rancid water!

“I, as a person, hate being threatened the most.....”

As if only a simple push was made, Yang Chen stood at the spot where Chen Feng was previously standing, and withdrew the palm he threw out.

Chen Feng was thoroughly disoriented by this push and knock/slam/dunk/crash. At the same time he felt blood in his mouth and nose, the putrid smell of the garbage dug its way into his nose, causing him to retch in a moment!

“Stinking brat dared to hit our big bro Feng, he wants to die!!”

“Beat him to death!”

Several hoodlums did not understand the situation clearly but saw that their boss was beat, relying on their numbers, they didn’t think about how Yang Chen did it, and like a swarm of bees, they disorderly swung their fists and legs at him!

Yang Chen was lazy to look at them more, he didn’t care how they punched with their fists or kicked with their legs, he caught all of them with his hands then threw them onto the side of the road.

The hoodlums only felt their hands or legs being clamped down by an immense

force, and their bodies being flung away against their control, immediately following with a hard knock onto the cement floor, before they started crying in pain.

Everyone else saw that Yang Chen was completely unscathed, and finally realized they were no match. Even Chen Feng who just crawled up from the garbage bin had cold sweat! He had seen the skills of some retired special forces under his father, every single one of them were his father's trump cards, and when in a fight they could hold their own against 10 people easily. But even those people didn't have such a large amount of strength, or such ridiculous speed, in a flash flinging away 6 men so effortlessly like they were just some random cats and dogs. It must be known that these little hoodlums may not have learned any martial arts, but they grew up fighting all the time, how can they possibly be beaten by just anybody?

"Let's go!" Although Chen Feng was so angry that he grinded his teeth, he had to save his face. At that moment, seeing the serene expression on Yang Chen's face, Chen Feng felt like he was looking at something as scary as a ghost, and hurriedly ordered his followers to run away.

Old Li and several bystanders witnessed Yang Chen's skills, and all loudly cheered. These little hoodlums had been too accustomed to being domineering, while the other peddlers were all afraid of them, so Yang Chen's actions today naturally gave them satisfaction. However, these people also didn't dare to get too close to Yang Chen. After all, Chen Feng wasn't scary, but if Chen Feng's father, Chen Dehai came to deal with Yang Chen, they were afraid of being implicated.

Old Li was incomparably excited, "I say, little Yang, I didn't expect you to be so skilled at combat, did you learn martial arts in the past?"

"Yep..... I learned a little." Yang Chen wasn't willing to divulge more, fact was, if it wasn't for Chen Feng going overboard, dragging out his inner demons, he wouldn't have fought in the market even if he was beat to death. However, just as he told Chen Feng, he had his principle—hate being threatened the most! Perhaps, this type of eccentricity was something he could never erase, no matter how low-profile he lived, because, he had the dignity of being strong!

Old Li saw that Yang Chen wasn't willing to speak more of it, and didn't pursue any further, with worry he asked, "Little Yang, right now you have beaten Chen Feng back, but if he calls his father Chen Dehai over, what are you going to do? You must know that Chen Dehai is a part of one of the two big gangs of the west region, the West Union Society, and is also an important figure among them. In this area nobody dares to provoke him!"

West Union Society huh..... Yang Chen unconcernedly laughed, then suddenly said to Old Li, "Got a cigarette?"

Seeing Yang Chen's indifferent expression, Old Li could only helplessly worry, hearing Yang Chen request for a cigarette, he couldn't help but bitterly smile as he said, "Didn't you brat say you want to give up smoking?"

"Forget that, I'm not giving it up, I'm not used to not having a smoke after beating people up." Yang Chen sighed in his heart, he didn't expect that Chen Dehai was part of West Union Society, originally he planned to keep his distance from this type of people, which was why he wasn't willing to become any closer to Rose, but he didn't realize that he was already standing in the front line of battle.

Old Li fished out a packet of a 1 dollar and 50cents Orchid brand cigarettes, and gave Yang Chen a stick, "Poor people choose the cheapest cigarettes when they smoke, this cigarette is strong, not too shabby to smoke right?"

"Hiss....." Yet Yang Chen smoked a breath with incomparable pleasure, with a grin he said, "That's right, a strong one is needed."

"Young people should smoke less, it's bad for the body." Old Li smiled as he kindly advised.

Yang Chen slightly smiled back, in his heart he said: *If smoking can harm my body, then all these years I've wasted my time practicing martial arts.*

After the two finished their break, they began working on their business. Yang Chen also started reheating his lamb skewers, and grilling the raw ones, with a stick in his mouth, taking it as his own breakfast. Although this job was filthy, but doing it felt enjoyable, from time to time he even grinned towards the other peddlers in the surrounding.

Not too long after, a police car drove by, two policemen and once police officer wearing a white shirt came out of it, walking towards Yang Chen with a grave expression.

The leading police officer coldly asked. “Are you Yang Chen?”

§

Chapter 6: Infuriate

Once the police arrived, the surrounding populace crowded over, discussing in whispers whether Yang Chen is about to be unlucky.

“Yep.....It’s me.” Yang Chen raised his head in bewilderment, he didn’t understand why the police would come to find him, could it be that the country’s authorities have spotted him? That can’t be, if that were the case, the ones being sent would be the secret special forces, moreover it would be a sudden night raid, how can it be 3 little policemen?

The police officer flashed his badge, and said with cold arrogance, “I am West Region Police Department’s Captain Feng Biao, someone reported that you are a suspect who beat up and murdered youths, right now we want to bring you to the police station to assist with the investigation immediately!”

So this is what’s going on..... Yang Chen understood in a flash, seems like it was the devious plan of the one who ran away, Chen Feng. The criminal underworld actually had the police to their work for them!

Old Li who stood at the side panicked, and hurriedly went up to explain, “My police friends, you guys are arresting the wrong person! That was Chen Feng and several hoodlums arbitrarily collecting protection fees, what Yang Chen did earlier was self-defense!”

“Hmph, whether we arrested the wrong person or not, we will naturally investigate clearly! All I saw was Boss Chen’s son beat to the point he puked blood, yet I do not see this fella hurt in any way!” Feng Biao finished speaking, and no longer entertained Old Li, he waved his hand to let the 2 policemen come forward to detain Yang Chen.

Yang Chen didn’t resist, after being handcuffed all he did was sigh a little, then say to Old Li, “Don’t worry, I didn’t do anything I should be guilty of, this is not a big deal. Help me watch over this mutton skewers stall of mine, if I’m not back when it’s dark, help me push it back home.”

“Don’t speak rubbish, hurry up and move!” Feng Biao sternly said.

Old Li still wanted to speak more, but he also knew that he wouldn't be of any help, and could only bitterly sigh watching Yang Chen arrested by the police and enter the police car.

After Feng Biao and gang brought Yang Chen away, the resident peddlers finally started cursing out loud, about none other than the police and underworld boss being "villains colluding together," or "government and criminals are one family" and such. However, in front of the police they would never dare to say these words.

◦

After being brought into the police station, Yang Chen was immediately pulled into the interrogation room. In this exceedingly stern room, Yang Chen looked all around in curiosity. To be honest, he had been to police stations many times in the past, but this was his first time entering one as a criminal.

After Feng Biao called his 2 robust police subordinates into the room, he coldly laughed and said, "Look at your leisure expression, you still have the spare time to look around this room, when I return later to take a look at you, I'll see if you still have the mood to be like this." With that said, with a slamming sound he shut the metal door and walked off.

◦

Yang Chen sat down without looking concerned, he calmly looked towards the 2 policemen who also sat down in front of him, they glared at him covetously as if they were staring at a prey.

A policeman with a big mustache began interrogating, "Name?"

"Yang Chen."

"Gender?"

"Male....." Yang Chen cooperated with the questions, while wearing a smile.

"Age?"

"24."

"Place of birth?"

“Zhong Hai.”

.....

After a string of simple yet irritating questions, Yang Chen as before remained calm and collected as he patiently answered. He answered happily even if was the most retarded questions ever, unexpectedly causing the 2 policemen to be the ones that felt irritated.

The order they received from Feng Biao was to find a reason to deal with Yang Chen, with him being this cooperative, he deserved to be called a role model for all suspects. How are they going to find the justification to make him suffer?

Finally, the other policeman with dark skin thought of something, and asked, “Today you beat up 6 youths at the market, is there such a thing?”

“What happened wasn’t that I beat them up, it was them trying to collect protection fees from me, they extorted first, I have the rights to self-defense.” Yang Chen replied .

“I’m not clear whether they collected protection fees or not, but you made a move first, did you not?” The policeman with a big mustache maliciously smiled as he asked.

“Yep.....” Yang Chen nodded honestly, “However I believe the fault in this matter doesn’t lie in me, in the worst case we could have a lawsuit.”

“Fighting in a lawsuit..... A mutton skewers seller.....” The dark-faced policeman whispered with disdain, he brought out a form and pointed at the signature line, “Write your name there, indicating you admit to your crimes, furthermore, pay for the victims’ rightful compensation.”

Yang Chen swept a glance at it, it was actually a pre-done plea of guilt form, various kinds of charges were added up, enough to make him sit in jail for half a lifetime! Yang Chen’s expression turned playful as he coldly laughed and said, “Officer, this thing, I think it’s not legal right? I didn’t even admit to anything, and there suddenly is so many more criminal charges brought up.”

The dark-faced policeman fiercely slammed onto the table, “Are you questioning our integrity, thinking that we have planted false evidence against you!?” Do you know where you are right now!?”

“I’m just speaking the truth.” Yang Chen understood in his heart, these 2 were determined to make him commit a crime, unintentionally, his eyes revealed traces of coldness.

The 2 policemen naturally knew that Yang Chen wouldn’t sign this document, any normal person who could read wouldn’t willingly enter jail for half a lifetime. There is only one reason for bringing this document out— — to *infuriate* Yang Chen! Obviously, they succeeded.

“Brat, what you are doing is not cooperating with our investigation, do you know what are the consequences!?” Big mustache stood up, and slowly walked behind Yang Chen, cracking his fists.

Yang Chen glanced at the camera in the room, he reckoned that for the scene in this room, only him contradicting the police could be seen, while what comes after is things that the people outside have no way of knowing, even if it was known, who would rashly gossip about things that happened in a police station?

Seems like in the entire world, there is this type of police in every place.....

“I don’t know what consequences I will face, but the 2 of you will definitely face a consequence you didn’t expect.....” Yang Chen heedlessly turned his head over, grinning at the big mustache policeman.

“You’re courting death!”

Seems like Yang Chen finally said something that offended the police, the big mustache policeman fiercely stretched his hand to grab onto Yang Chen’s shirt collar, while the other hand formed a fist, ready to slam!

But it was right at this moment, big mustache’s hand grabbed onto air, and saw that unwittingly, Yang Chen stood up from his seat, with his hand conversely stretched and grabbed onto big mustache’s shirt collar!

“Is this what you wanted to do?” Yang Chen evilly grinned, and slammed onto big mustache’s stomach with a hook!

It could be seen that big mustache’s body spasm for a while, curl up and fall onto the ground twitching!

Dark-faced policeman angrily stood up, “You dare to attack police!” With that

said, he no longer gave a damn as he pulled out a Type 54 handgun from his waist, and aimed it at Yang Chen!

But Yang Chen simply ignored the gun pointed at him, with a lightning-quick step, he shifted behind the dark-faced policeman in a flash, lightly tapped on the dark-faced policeman's arm, and as if that arm was electrocuted, it violently trembled, and the Type 54 handgun immediately fell onto the ground!

The dark-faced policeman simply wasn't able to react before feeling numbness at the back of his neck, and falling unconscious.....

Yang Chen picked up the illegal document on the table, making a strange smile as he said, "This type of ruse is something you guys often employ right? I wonder what will happen if this was divulged."

§

Chapter 7: Police Beauty Chief

Hearing that Yang Chen plans to divulge the evidence they were provided, big mustache policeman who was still conscious broke out in a cold sweat.

“You.....You dare! Do you know who you offended! That is Boss Chen’s son! Boss Chen’s men can wipe out your ancestor’s last 18 generations!” Big mustache roared, but the sharp pain from his stomach simply left him unable to get up!

Yang Chen’s face immediately turned cold, “Boss Chen again..... People like you are really failures, every single one of you don’t even know, I your father hates being threatened the most.....” With that said, he moved in front of big mustache and kicked him, big mustache directly lost consciousness from this kick!

“Bam!”

Suddenly, the interrogation room’s metal door was suddenly pushed open, and a shadow charged in at lightning speed!

“Halt!”

A clear yet strict voice entered his ears, Yang Chen turned around in bewilderment, seeing the person who entered, a light shone in his eyes.

This is a valiant beauty, a policewoman with shoulder-length hair, with clear eyes like the autumn waters, a sharp nose, and charming lips with light pink lipstick. At first glance this face looked like some Korean celebrity who went through a perfect plastic surgery, but looking closely, a heroic air could be felt emitting from her bones. She was many times prettier than those so-called celebrities, and can hundred percent be considered a beautiful police flower.

But immediately following, Yang Chen spotted that on the policewoman’s shoulders was surprisingly 2 clover shaped badges, this was the mark of a grade 2 police inspector.

In a flash Yang Chen understood, this young and beautiful policewoman who

looked like a movie star, was actually the West Region Police Department's Chief, a real personnel of Huaxia country with power!

At that moment, Cai Yan was in a very bad mood, a meeting just ended for the recent bank robbery case that gave her a headache when she suddenly received a report that in her interrogation room, there was a suspect beating the police, this was definitely looking down upon her authority!

"You! Put your hands behind your head, and stand against the wall!" Cai Yan pointed at Yang Chen, sternly yelling.

Yang Chen sized her up, in his heart he was moved by how uniforms were great, no wonder so many people who were with him in the past had their mates put on various uniforms before doing the deed..... Hearing the lady Bureau Chief's orders at that moment, without following or denying he smiled, "Beautiful and great Bureau Chief, I think that it would be better if you took a look at this thing first." That said, he threw the document in his hands to the policewoman.

Cai Yan wasn't an impulsive person, otherwise she wouldn't have managed to get on the throne that is the West Region's Police Department's Bureau Chief, no matter how strong her background was it would never have been enough. Thus, when she saw Yang Chen's cool and collected expression, she felt that things weren't as they seemed, she puzzlingly caught the document, and swept a few glances at it.

Gradually, on Cai Yan's tender, beautiful and heroic face, a layer of frost appeared, and she fiercely paid a glance to the big mustache and dark-skinned policemen on the ground. With an ice-cold voice she said to Yang Chen, "May I know your name, mister?"

"Surname is Yang, name is Chen."

"I am Cai Yan, West Region Police Department's Bureau Chief, I would like to offer an apology for the faults of my subordinates. But you have beat up law enforcement personnel, therefore you must be detained, you have the right to remain silent, and also have the right to have a lawyer speak on your behalf, under the circumstances that no one pays the bail for you, 48 hours must pass before you can be released." Cai Yan finished speaking, and without waiting for

Yang Chen to say anything, she immediately commanded several policemen to carry the 2 unconscious men out. Then with a complicated expression she glanced at Yang Chen, and closed the metal door!

Yang Chen watched the bunch of people come and go stupefied, he was actually still stuck here. He couldn't help but bitterly laugh, requesting a lawyer, requesting someone to pay bail, he doesn't even have a cellphone, who is he going to request? Seems like he had to stay in this little room for a full 48 hours.

Outside the room, Cai Yan looked at Feng Biao who came over with a head full of cold sweat, frowned and said, "Captain Feng, the things you did today, I will report during the end of month evaluation, you better pray for good fortune!" With that said, leaving Feng Biao whose legs were trembling, she returned to her office.

Returning to her office, Cai Yan did not stop to rest. Although it hadn't been many years since she joined the police, her keen senses helped her uncover many huge cases. This time too she sensed something strange. From the young man named Yang Chen, she actually felt a mysterious pressure. That fella undoubtedly smiled so harmlessly, just what was she afraid of?

Cai Yan was proud, she liked the feeling of having everything within her grasp, so she immediately brought the information in her hands into play, and searched for files regarding Yang Chen.

Very quickly, Yang Chen's profile was found by Cai Yan, and the information regarding Yang Chen was little beyond expectations Cai Yan only took a few looks before she realized, there were too many oddities in this profile.....

"5 years old, strayed away from parents, brought overseas by child traffickers..... Adopted by a kind couple..... 23 years old, graduated from the United States' Harvard University's Market and Management Studies with a master's degree, and returned on the same year....."

At the end of this ridiculously simple profile, there was actually a picture of Yang Chen and Harvard University's lady headmaster, Drew Foster in the school, with Harvard's signature red-colored campus, and the eye-catching university crest. In the picture Yang Chen had a scholarly air, sharing a brilliant smile with Foster.

The police department's database of course wouldn't have photoshopped photos, but Cai Yan still felt like she was being fooled.

To hell with that fucking Harvard University's master degree! If he really is a Harvard University student, why would he be selling mutton skewers in the market?! Also, being adopted by a kind couple, what happened after being adopted? There was more than 10 years in between, how did he jump directly into graduation from college?

However, very quickly, Cai Yan calmed down, the information database of the police naturally couldn't be randomly altered by anybody, every person's profile was inserted by the authorities, since this profile of Yang Chen with so many loopholes that it was funny that this could exist, then it must have its reasons. But, why would the police department's higher levels insert this profile?

Cai Yan quickly thought of two possibilities. First, Yang Chen's identity was very special, and can be classified as a country-level secret personnel, for example the security bureau's secret service. Second, Yang Chen's identity was again very special, however, it's classified as a special person the country wasn't willing to let people find out about.....

Cai Yan quickly eliminated the first possibility, if he was of the security bureau's secret service, then the information should be detailed to the point of being incomparably fussy, that way it wouldn't draw suspicion. Therefore, Yang Chen could only be classified as a special person, to the extent that the higher levels weren't willing to divulge, yet weren't willing to specially do up a cover for, simply leaving it as an empty shell for show.

This was the irrefutable facts, Cai Yan wasn't merely a police officer, she was a beauty, but most importantly, she was a woman with a heart full of curiosity! Towards someone with this type of identity, Cai Yan was naturally attracted, in just a split second, within Cai Yan's heart, Yang Chen turned into a notorious bandit, an internationally wanted criminal, the Golden Triangle's drug lord, a mad scientist and several other identities. The one thing that could be confirmed was — Bureau Chief Cai was interested in Yang Chen!

Just as Cai Yan was considering how to investigate this suspicious person's background, the door was knocked.

“Come in.”

A young policeman with a fair and clear face wore a fawning smile as he entered, in the policemen’s hearts, their Bureau Chief was not only a super beauty, she was even more so a Extinguishing Priestess type of character, with a low voice he reported, “Bureau Chief, Cheng Dong Law Firm’s Lawyer Zhang wants to bail out the suspect named Yang Chen.”

[TL: The Extinguishing Priestess “灭绝师太” is a reference to a character in the famous wuxia book, The Heavenly Sword and Dragon Saber written by Jin Yong(Louis Cha). The character was a very strict and stubborn person.]

§

Chapter 8: Chrysanthemum Tea

Yang Chen walked out of the police station in bewilderment, he had no idea why this lawyer who was a total stranger bailed him out, moreover from the police's attitude, he could tell that this lawyer had a deep background.

At the police station's entrance, Lawyer Zhang with a head full of grizzled hair wore a gold framed spectacles, shook Cai Yan's hands looking dignified, "Many thanks to Bureau Chief Cai for cooperating, it's rare to see someone as young as Bureau Chief Cai taking up such a position in the West Region's Police Department, sure enough, a great person has great magnanimity."

Of that moment, Cai Yan's face was reserved and serene, with a frosty formal smile pasted on her beautiful face, "Lawyer Zhang is a senior in Zhong Hai's lawyers scene, us of the younger generation have to treat you with due respect as a matter of course." Although she said these words to Lawyer Zhang, Cai Yan's gaze involuntarily turned towards Yang Chen who was lazily stretching.

Cai Yan would never have thought, this Lawyer Zhang's sudden visit was to bail out Yang Chen. Although Lawyer Zhang wouldn't reveal who his employer in the background was, someone who was able to request this old veteran lawyer definitely was someone with fame and intelligence in Zhong Hai City, someone like that actually stepped up for the market's mutton skewers seller Yang Chen. It seemed like her guess was on point——Yang Chen's background was not ordinary.

After getting out of the police station's courtyard, Yang Chen modestly smiled towards Lawyer Zhang and said, "This.....Thank you Lawyer Zhang for helping, otherwise I would have had to spend 2 days in that interrogation room. You have no idea, I have promised a friend to be their guest tonight, what a headache....."

Watching Yang Chen's awkward smile, Lawyer Zhang was instead curious in his heart. Previously he still had no idea why that person wanted him to bail out this young man, but meeting him now, he noticed that this man truly had some out of the ordinary points. Simply his indifference and composure while walking out

of the police station, the leisurely calmness after leaving it, along with the mood and temper to make a joke, this young man definitely possessed an extraordinary bearing.

Withdrawing the contempt he held in his heart, Lawyer Zhang laughed and said, "Mr Yang need not thank me, I was just entrusted by someone to do something and did what an honest man would, if you wish to thank somebody, that person is right in front.

His gaze followed where Lawyer Zhang had pointed, Yang Chen suddenly noticed a red limousine stopped by on the roadside carpark.

Yang Chen gave it a glance, and immediately became interested. That car was in fact a car rarely seen in the country, a Bentley Arnage, this type of British car represents a graceful and royal temperament, its lowest selling price in Huaxia country hit above 4,000,000. To be able to casually drive a car like that, the worth of that person must surely be at least several hundred million.

After saying his goodbyes to Lawyer Zhang, Yang Chen slowly walked to the side of the Bentley, then looked into towards the driver's seat, and it was difficult for his gaze to shift away, lightly smiling he said, "It's you?"

Oh the pure black leather seat, sat a beautiful city girl with a clear face, she wore a pure white cotton dress, and had a head full of beautiful black hair with not a strand out-of-place, on the pretty and delicate face was a large framed sunglasses, covering half of that beautiful face. There was a stark contrast between the sunglasses and her skin color, revealing her proudness and coldness, and at the same time her beauty that could make one's heart tremble.

The car window winded down, and the beauty didn't even take another look at Yang Chen, unenthusiastically she said, "Get on."

Yang Chen was also not overly polite, he laughed a little then entered and freely shifted his butt around, adjusted the height of the seat and shifted it back, with an intimate expression like he met an old friend, "This morning you simply left like that, I was curious as to whether I will meet you again, never would I have expected that you would come to the police station to help me pay bail so quickly, does this count as fate?"

This beautiful lady was the stranger that just did the deed with Yang Chen.

Yang Chen saw her frosty face, in his mind thinking back to the passionate night the two shared. It was like she was a totally different person, and he couldn't help feeling the mood to joke.

"Nobody will think you are mute if you keep quiet."

Without speaking nonsense with Yang Chen, the woman stepped on the accelerator, and the car quickly left the police station.

After about 10 minutes later, they stopped at a coffee shop near west region's public square.

Walking past the gigantic fountain, Yang Chen followed the silent lady into the coffee shop, apparently, a small private room had already been booked, following the waiter, the two were guided to a corner of the secluded 2nd-storey. Several large plants were set on the surroundings, giving the place a beautifully tranquil and secluded feel.

"Miss Lin, Mister, what would the two of you like to drink?" The courteous male waiter smiled and asked.

It seemed that she was a regular customer, taking off her sunglasses, revealing that countenance that could lead a majority of men's blood to flow, the lady surnamed Lin indifferently said, "Blue mountain, add milk, no sugar."

Yang Chen flipped and turned the menu, creased his brows in thought, then smiled and said, "This..... Let me have a cup of *Chrysanthemum Tea*, not too hot, I don't need the best, give me the cheapest."

The male waiter's smiling face turned rigid, awkwardly he replied, "Mister, we are a coffee shop, we have no tea, moreover chrysanthemum tea....."

"Then I want a cup of water, does water have to be paid for?" Yang Chen asked in vexation.

"Umm.....We do have water, however, Mister, do you really only want water?" The male waiter looked at Yang Chen with a weird expression, as if he simply couldn't understand, a person who was friend of and entered together with this goddess, was a guest that orders water.

The lady who kept looking out of the window cold and detached shot a glance

at Yang Chen, and said to the male waiter, "Give him a cup of Naples, American style."

"Alright Miss Lin." Like he received amnesty, the male waiter retreated in a flurry.

Yet Yang Chen had a mournful face, "I say.....Miss, your surname is Lin right? Miss Lin, I don't have the money for that Naples or something you ordered, a few hundred dollars for that cup, I would have to sell a few thousand sticks of mutton skewers!"

"I'll treat you." With her eyebrows knit together, the lady impatiently said.

"This is not a matter of whether you treat me or not, it's about my income not permitting me to drink this grade of coffee. Also, as a literate man with four healthy limbs, how could I covet a coffee treat by a girl like you? You must know, although I'm poor, I'm still an upright person, and not a hoodlum that swindles. If I want to drink coffee, I have to be the one to pay for it, but fact is, I don't really like to drink coffee....."

"It's my treat, not you coveting." Said the lady as she slightly crumbled, she already took a step back to treat a cup of coffee yet she still had to face such nonsense.

But Yang Chen had a face of solemnity, as he seriously spoke, "Miss Lin, as those from the ancient times say, a gentleman does not eat free food, what you are doing is charity to me, if you look down on my income and look down on my status in society that's fine, that's right, I'm a mutton skewers seller. But you cannot insult my integrity, and trample on my self-esteem....."

"Enough!!!"

Great beauty Lin suddenly slammed on the table and stood up, her plump chest repeatedly undulated, "Do you have an end? I don't have the free time to speak drivel to your nonsense!"

The moment those words were spoken, Yang Chen who was constantly jabbering on and on stopped, like he was a totally different person, his face revealed some pride as he smiled, "Miss Lin, this should be the way, you're so young, be more rich in emotions, don't maintain a boarded up face. I find your

angry expression much prettier than your cold expression.”

“You.....” Totally without the manners of a wise and virtuous woman, great beauty Lin sat back down on her seat, a pair of bubbly glittering eyes stared at Yang Chen, “I don’t have the free time to speak such nonsense with you, right now, I have something to discuss with you.”

§

Chapter 9: You're Shameless

“Speak then, what is it?” While speaking, Yang Chen put one of his legs on the leather seat, took off his plastic slippers, and scratched on his foot with one hand. With the hot weather it was easy to feel itchy, Yang Chen considered whether it was time to buy some ointment to rub on.

Seeing this scene, the words Lin Ruoxi was about to speak froze, subconsciously she covered her cute little nose, frowning she said, “Can you not make such disgusting actions?”

Yang Chen did not mind as he laughed, “Hehe, when my leg is itchy I scratch it, it’s a matter of course, what is disgusting about it? Why forcefully endure and torment oneself?”

Lin Ruoxi swore, in her entire life this was her first time seeing such a shameless person. Although she made preliminary preparation, and knew that this person was merely a peddler than sells mutton skewers, but so what? The fact that she lost her virginity to him cannot be changed, as for what comes after, she could only make the best out of her mistake.....

“Yang Chen.....”

“Wait!” Yang Chen once again stopped Lin Ruoxi from speaking.

“What now?” Lin Ruoxi was a little angry, on her icy face there was a light blush from the blood rising.

Somewhat embarrassed, Yang Chen said, “Miss Lin, you see, you know my name, and even knew I was caught by the police, obviously you have had me investigated. But I don’t even know what your name is, yet you say you want to discuss something with me, isn’t this a little.....” With that said, he greedily sized Lin Ruoxi up, and licked his lips.

“Lin Ruoxi, the Ruo from ruruo(as if), the Xi from xishui(stream of water)..... Can we discuss now?” Lin Ruoxi suddenly regretted her decision, the man in front of her eyes had an evil face, worlds different from the honest man she

thought he was, but when she set her mind on something she never had a change of heart. Therefore, bracing herself, Lin Ruoxi still planned on continuing till the end.

“Lin, Ruo, Xi.....” As if Yang Chen was pondering while softly calling out a few times, he said, “Not bad, this name suits you well.”

“My grandfather was the one who named me, but this isn’t the main point, I need you to do something for me.” Lin Ruoxi felt that her name felt disgusting when called out by this rogue.

Yang Chen put on his guard as he looked at Lin Ruoxi, “That.....Miss Lin, you can’t possibly want me to reimburse the debt of helping me pay the bail right? I don’t have money, only one rotten life.”

Seeing Yang Chen put on a “clearly pitiful” look, Lin Ruoxi felt the corniness, and was lazy to take another look at him, she turned her head away and said, “Marry me.”

“What?!”

“Marry me.....” Lin Ruoxi’s rosy face looked like juice could flow from it, repeating herself, her voice was low like a mosquito.

Yang Chen still suspected that he heard wrongly, very carefully he turned his ear forward, and hoarsely asked, “Miss Lin, can you speak clearly, why do I find that I’m hearing things.....”

“You aren’t hearing things.” It seemed that Lin Ruoxi was determined, and returned to a cold indifferent face as she said, “I said, I want you to marry me! Get married immediately!”

After word after word made their way into Yang Chen’s ears, Yang Chen had no choice but to admit he didn’t hear things, and couldn’t help but smile bitterly and say, “Miss Lin, this is too.....too sloppy of you isn’t it? You can’t say you want to marry me just because you got on the bed with me once, right? Marriage is something that concerns a person’s entire lifetime, I believe you need to carefully reconsider, do not act on impulse.”

This time Yang Chen did not joke with her, and instead sincerely and earnestly spoke to Lin Ruoxi, hoping that she could understand.

Yet Lin Ruoxi immediately shook her head, “I’m not a child, I’m clear as to what I’m doing. I’m also not young, it’s about time I married, however there has not been a suitable person to choose..... Of course, don’t think that you’re the suitable person to choose. Due to various reasons, those things yesterday happened.....” At this point, Lin Ruoxi’s pretty face involuntarily blushed, then she immediately followed with, “I can tell you clearly, that I’m a very reserved woman. Rather than be forced to marry with a man that I’m unfamiliar with and loathe, why not choose you, at least I gave my first time to you.”

Yang Chen deeply hummed for a moment, then with a cold smile he said, “Miss Lin, I understand what you mean. The marriage you want is only for display, you need someone as a male protagonist that conforms to you. In comparison with the other candidates, I seem to be the easiest to control, right?”

Hearing her plan being spoken out, Lin Ruoxi couldn’t help but feel a little uneasy, but she did not deny it as she nodded and said, “Yang Chen, I can guarantee, if you conform to me, 3 years later, at most 3 years, once my career is steady, we will separate. You need not carry any burden or responsibility, moreover, I will give you a large reward, much more than your mutton skewers stall in 10 lifetimes.”

“Miss Lin.....” Yang Chen’s face looked frosty, as he playfully said, “You don’t seem to fully understand one thing. Although I’m poor, and although I’m a mutton skewers seller, that does not signify that I will be the husband of a woman I have no feelings to for money, even if it’s fake. You can call me a hypocrite, stupid or overestimating myself, but I as a person, don’t have a hot temper but I’m stubborn. I have my principles, in my dictionary, there isn’t a phrase like ‘fake marriage.’”

“You.....” Lin Ruoxi truly did not expect, that, a stinking man who was so trivial that he couldn’t be more trivial would reject her request, even though it’s merely a fake marriage. Could it be that he doesn’t know, in the entire Zhong Hai City how many handsome and talented men wishes to approach her, yet were all out of consideration!?

Yet Yang Chen wasn’t done, he continued and said, “If you really are a reserved woman, unable to accept that your chastity was seized, I sympathize with you, I feel sorry and guilt about this. If you are willing, I will earnestly woo you, until

you are able to truly like me, that way, if we get married, I can accept that. As for whether I would really love you with my heart, you need not have any doubts, I believe that any ordinary man can't reject your charm. However..... You merely want me to be the shield for your career, feign 3 years as your husband, I, Yang Chen is unable to accept that.

"Hmph, court me..... What are you going to rely on to court me? Your mutton skewers?" Lin Ruoxi was truly angered, she was unable to make heads or tails of this man's arrogance. Since young, there hasn't been a man that had rejected her request, but unexpectedly, today an ant-like man rejected marrying her!

Yang Chen seemingly returned to his rogue-style, he made a 'hehe' laugh and said, "You see, I'm so handsome, so masculine, the mutton skewers I grill are also delicious, I live a simple and arduous life, with the merits of a traditional good man. More importantly, I treat women very well, if it was my own wife, I would treat her even better....."

"Enough!" Lin Ruoxi was afraid that if she continued to listen she would walk off from the anger, "100 million! I'll buy your 3 years!"

"This is not a matter of money....."

"2 years 100 million!" Lin Ruoxi lowered her demands, and said while panting with rage.

As before, Yang Chen shook his head, "Even if it was 10 billion it won't do, this is a matter of principle."

"Do you believe that since I can let you get out of the police station, I can let you enter jail for your entire life!?" Lin Ruoxi eyes were red, she felt wronged in her heart as she fiercely spoke.

Yang Chen laughed out loud, "Based on what? Could it be that Miss Lin wants to tell the police, that last night I raped you!? I can clearly remember that Miss Lin demanded for it many times....."

"You..... I..... I..... You....." Lin Ruoxi's spotlessly white teeth bit on her soft and tender lips, tears of feeling wronged and suffering suddenly overflowed from her eyes, "Yang Chen, *you're shameless!*"

Chapter 10: A Stain In One's Life

If it were half a year ago, and a woman cried in front of Yang Chen, Yang Chen would have just thought that the enemy's smoke bomb irritated her eyes, or that this was a performance to make him lower his guard, or even more likely an act to seem lovely and pitiful to entice him..... But today, the pretty woman in front of him had a connection to him, and seemed to be crying due to his words.

Involuntarily, Yang Chen felt his a burst of guilt in his heart, although he felt that his words weren't wrong, but to a modern girl who have had retained her chastity for over 20 years, this truly was somewhat cruel.

"Alright, don't cry.....I'll apologize to you, won't that do?" Yang Chen felt fidgety and touched his shirt's pocket, but when he touched it was empty, only then did he remember he recently attempted to quit smoking and hadn't bought cigarettes to bring around.

Lin Ruoxi's teary beautiful face could attract unlimited sympathy, but this little girl is also a stubborn person, after crying out two lines of tears, she took out a tissue and wiped them away, then forcefully endured. With a pair of red eyes she stared at Yang Chen and said, "I'm going to ask you one more time, are you going to marry me?"

"I say, Miss Lin, in this day and age why is there still the matter of a pretty lady insisting on a man to be her husband? I spoke very clearly, I will not assist you in playing this type of boring game for 3 years." Yang Chen sighed and stood up, intending to leave.

This time Lin Ruoxi did not say anything more, only a trace of misery appeared in her eyes. With a numb expression she stood up, and directly walked towards the balcony of the coffee shop's 2nd floor.

The coffee shop's balcony was quite spacious, with several large umbrellas to shield from the sun on top of the refined tables, on the balcony various kinds of bonsai plants were placed, giving a fresh and clean feeling.

Yang Chen saw this scene, and his pupils shrunk, he sucked in a cool breath

and said, “Miss Lin, it can’t possibly be that just because I’m not willing to marry you, you are going to balcony to jump down from it, right?”

As if Lin Ruoxi didn’t hear a thing, without uttering a word she continued walking to the balcony. Just like this, Lin Ruoxi slowly got to the edge of the balcony, casually pulled a chair over, stepped on it and got closer to the guard rail.

This time Yang Chen was worried, this girl can’t possibly have such a fierce temper, right? She had to know that if she jumped off the balcony, and fell onto the hard stone surface, even if she doesn’t die she will be crippled.....

However, Lin Ruoxi’s actions immediately let Yang Chen know, how terrifying her determination was.....

Apathetically, Lin Ruoxi turned her head back to take a look at Yang Chen, her eyes brimmed with resolve, hate, pain and sadness, as if her entire soul was terribly tormented from staying in that absolutely beautiful body, and wanted to attempt to break free from it.....

The 2 pairs of eyes interlocked. Yang Chen felt his heart twitch, he was too familiar with this type of expression, this expression was also too similar to the image deep in his mind, which he had no way of erasing. It was that image, half a year ago, which made him break free from the bloody shackles he was held back by for more than 10 years, and made him return to his country of birth.....

But today, from Lin Ruoxi’s eyes, Yang Chen once again recalled too many things that he had tried to forget yet failed to forget. In this moment, Yang Chen was lost.

Lin Ruoxi looked Yang Chen standing there dumbstruck. She didn’t want to show the suffering in her heart..... Even if she jumped off, that man would remain unconcerned. Once again thinking of the pain of losing her virginity to him, and the pressure and disputes in her personal life, work life and home, Lin Ruoxi felt that she was truly about to crumble..... *What meaning is there in continuing this life? Death can end all of my troubles.....*

Right at this time, the young waiter who had the coffee prepared was carrying a tray up the stairs, and the first thing he saw, was the image of Lin Ruoxi about to jump off.

“Lin..... Miss Lin! What are you doing? It’s dangerous!”

Just as the male waiter spoke, a figure flashed past his eyes, bringing about an after image, so fast that it was like a movie’s special effects!

At the instant Lin Ruoxi held back her tears and was about to jump off the building, a pair of strong yet forceful hands suddenly wrapped around her delicate waist, stopping her jumping motion.

All of these happened in a flash, the mail waiter who stood at the head of the stairs simply wasn’t able to see what actually happened clearly, all he saw was on the balcony, the man with crude clothes was hugging the beauty’s waist. The two were silent as they stood quietly on the balcony motionlessly for a long time.....

Sunlight scattered onto the green plants on the balcony, and onto the young man and woman, with an atmosphere that leads one to feel harmony and have ambiguous fantasies.

At the same time the waiter sighed a breath of relief, he inwardly envied this man for being able to have such a relationship with a great beauty like Miss Lin. After silently placing the coffee down, he retreated down the stairs.

Lin Ruoxi felt herself move from hell to heaven in a flash, she did not know how Yang Chen accomplished moving to her back so quickly, she also didn’t have the mood to think about such a thing. She could only feel a pair of scorching hot arms tightly embracing her waist, so tight that she felt a little pain, while the man’s heavy breath slowly blew onto her sensitive shoulder.

“Release me, even if you stop me for now, I will still die later on.” Lin Ruoxi’s face was flushed, but she still spoke stubbornly.

Yang Chen sucked in a deep breath, as if he was enjoying Lin Ruoxi’s body fragrance. Her body had a faint smell of jasmine, as someone who has smelt too many top quality perfumes, Yang Chen felt that this body fragrance beats everything else.

“Lin Ruoxi, I lost, I’ll marry you.” Yang Chen softly sighed and said.

Lin Ruoxi’s delicate body jolted, then she turned silent. *Have I won? But why is it that I don’t feel the slightest bit happy? That’s right, this is merely a man to be*

used as a shield, he even seized my chastity when my consciousness was unclear, I hate him, how can I possibly love him? If I don't love him, why would I be happy about getting married to him?

At the same time, many passersby on the square saw the man and woman on the balcony, many of them with keen interest pointed them out.

“Hubby, what do you think they’re doing?” Some girl asked with her arm wrapped around a man’s arm.

“Isn’t that obvious? They’re copying Titanic, it looks really romantic.....”

On the balcony, Lin Ruoxi couldn’t stand those hot gazes, and finally realized that the two’s motions looked incredibly weird. She jumped off the chair in a panic, broke free from Yang Chen’s embrace, and returned into the coffee shop.

When the two sat back down, the matter had a conclusion, but the two still remained silent, minding their own business with the coffee.

After a long time, Lin Ruoxi put down her coffee cup, took out 2 pieces of paper from her small LV bag, and a pen, then handed them one of them over to Yang Chen.

“What’s this?” Yang Chen returned from his deep thoughts to reality, and puzzlingly asked.

“Contract, a marriage contract.” Lin Ruoxi once more turned away, refusing to look at Yang Chen, returning to her initial cold face.

Yang Chen smiled, picked up the fountain pen and signed his name naturally on the signature box without even looking at the contents.

“You’re not even looking at what’s on it before signing?” Lin Ruoxi frowned and said.

Yang Chen shook his head, smiled and said, “Even without looking I know, it must be things like I cannot enter your room, cannot push you over, mutual agreement of not interfering with each other’s private lives, when outside I have to conscientiously act properly, with a reward 3 years later. Right?”

Lin Ruoxi pursed her lips, and mumbled, “More or less, since you’ve already signed, you must abide by it in the future.”

“Hehe. However, little Ruoxi, what if you take the initiative to ask me for it..... What should I do.....” Yang Chen frivolously asked.

“You.....” Lin Ruoxi was angered to the point her whole face blushed, “Hmph! It won’t happen, that type of *stain in one’s life*, once is enough.....”

Stain in one’s life? The thing that half the people in the whole world do everyday was a stain in one’s life to this girl. Yang Chen didn’t retort and laughed, he drank a big mouth and finished the cup of coffee, dusted his butt and stood up, “Alright, later on I still have to go to a friend’s place for dinner. Let us leave the matter of registering for tomorrow.....”

“Wait, how do I contact you, what’s your cellphone number?” Lin Ruoxi said with dissatisfaction.

Yang Chen scratched his head, and replied embarrassed, “Didn’t you investigate me? I have no cellphone, if I bought one I still have to pay for the line, I don’t have the money. Tomorrow you can come to my house to find me, shouting for me from downstairs would do.” With that said he intended to leave.

“Hey!”

“Is there more?” Yang Chen turned back.

“You..... You’re not allowed to call me like that.” Lin Ruoxi herself found that form of address too embarrassing to say, it was too sappy!

Yang Chen understood in a flash, and followed with a serious face as he said, “As you bid, my lord wife.”

Lin Ruoxi instantly felt the sky spin and the earth twist..... How am I going to deal with this rogue in the future!?

Chapter 11: As A Guest

Since he had already agreed to be a guest at Old Li's house, Yang Chen naturally wouldn't forget that, as to keep his promise is what men need in their character to be great.

Yang Chen once again exaggerated a small thing to the extent of being the ultimate glory of the human civilization.

Due to being broke, and being unwilling to stay any longer with that frosty yet crazy and beautiful girl named Lin Ruoxi, Yang Chen chose to return home on foot. Since the journey wasn't long, and with Yang Chen's physical abilities being way beyond ordinary people's imaginations, this journey home didn't require much effort.

It was already evening, thus after taking a shower at home, Yang Chen once again opened his wooden chest, swept his gaze across it, then extracted a pale blue white-striped shirt and a pair of classic pure white shorts for his lower half. After buttoning some of his buttons at the wrong places, Yang Chen took a look at his reflection on the cracked mirror on the wall, at long last. He looked a little handsome.

The room still permeated a faint smell of fragrant jasmine left by Lin Ruoxi, Yang Chen deeply inhaled, thinking of how tomorrow he has to marry a woman he hasn't even known for more than a day, finding it funny. However, once he thought of how Lin Ruoxi's resolute eyes that made his frozen heart turn scorching hot, Yang Chen then felt strange feeling of intimacy birth within him towards that outrageously beautiful woman.

Was he trying to compensate? Or was she truly that much different from others? Yang Chen did not know, which was why he decided to marry her, and let time give him the answer as to what kind of feelings he had for her.

Old Li's house wasn't far, but without a any form of transport, Yang Chen could only use his two legs to make his way there. In the end he walked for half an hour before arriving. That was an old residential area in the West region,

surrounded by civilians that lacked the money to move into a new home, generations live in this archaic Jiang Nan-esque area.

After passing by several small houses with smokes coming out of their chimneys, Yang Chen knocked on a very dated red wooden door.

Soon after knocking, the wooden door was opened, beyond the door appeared a youthful and refreshing face, “Big Brother Yang! You’re here!”

“Jingjing, long time no see.” Yang Chen smiled from his heart, the girl in front had changed a lot in half a year, which made him surprised.

Li Jingjing’s face was elegant and refined as usual, with curly eyelashes, a delicate little nose and pleasant little mouth, a typical southern type of girl. Wearing a white short-sleeved T-shirt, and a tight fitting blue jean shorts on her bottom, a pair of beautiful white legs was revealed.

Seeing Yang Chen’s eyes sweep up and down with a naughty smile, Li Jingjing felt shy yet at the same time secretly delighted in her heart, she coquettishly said: “Big brother Yang, stop staring and come in.”

Yang Chen laughed and said: “Jingjing knows how to feel shy huh, you wouldn’t lose a piece of flesh even if big brother looked. Are you afraid your boyfriend gets jealous?”

“What do you mean! I don’t have a boyfriend.” Li Jingjing immediately denied, eyebrows joining looking a little angry.

“Okay Okay Okay..... I’m just joking with you.....” Yang Chen was a little helpless, he obviously could tell what this girl was thinking of, but his was a body filled with dark blood, how could he tarnish such a pure soul? Thus, he always kept his distance and reminded her he was her big brother and will not be the man she was thinking of.

Inside Old Li’s living room, Old Li happily welcomed him, “Little Yang, my child Jingjing was helping her mother cook earlier, but the moment she heard you knock on the door she rushed out like a rabbit.”

“Dad don’t speak nonsense.” Li Jingjing again looked bashful, clinging onto Old Li and not letting him say more.

Yang Chen laughed and sat with Old Li. The furniture in the house were all decades old, with red paint that somewhat withered, yet expressed some archaic tastes.

Under the dim light, summer flies flew about in the house, the corridor had breeze blowing in, bringing about a peaceful atmosphere.

Drinking the tea Li Jingjing brought out, Yang Chen suddenly felt a never before sense of fulfillment. He looked out into the night sky, a little dazed.

“Young man, don’t show such a disillusioned look, a great future awaits you.” Old Li gently said, drinking his green tea.

Yang Chen returned to his senses, smiled and said, “These days, ladies all like men who seem sophisticated, aren’t I just practicing to seem sophisticated?”

“Hehe”, Old Li laughed: “Little Yang, others might not notice, but I, Old Li has spent much of this half a year interacting with you, and am very clear of your character. You are not pretending, you little brat, if it wasn’t because of experiencing some things, why would you choose to go selling mutton skewers for no reason?”

Yang Chen was unwilling to say more, a man like Old Li who had experienced hardships naturally could tell that there was some things he hid deep in his heart. Even so, what Old Li was thinking happened was very far from the truth.

Some people are destined to be lonely, because nobody can associate with them.

Dinner was very luxurious, Old Li’s family specially butchered one of their old hens, and boiled an exquisite chicken soup. Fish meat and crab was all brought out. Considering Old Li’s financial conditions, this meal was even more luxurious than new year’s.

“Oh little Yang, eat more, although it is a little simple, it is still our family’s token of gratitude.” Aunt Li with a face full of wrinkles, yet happy, affectionately looked at Yang Chen as if she was looking at her own son.

Yang Chen did not say much, and did not do anything differently, he continuously ate big mouthfuls of meat, because he was very clear that only in this way would this couple truly be happy.

Li Jingjing from time to time also gave more food to Yang Chen, and would even secretly peek at Yang Chen eating when her parents weren't paying attention. When she heard Yang Chen say the dishes taste good, it was like she tasted honey in her heart, because most of the dishes were made by her.

In the beginning Yang Chen did not plan to drink alcohol, but did not hold back because he didn't even succeed in quitting smoking, and also because of the matter regarding the marriage. Yang Chen was also lazy to reason with himself more and drank with Old Li a few cups of soju, the burning feeling in the stomach was very comfortable.

"Little Yang, if it wasn't for the money you lent us in this half a year, our family would be in dire straits. Now that our Jingjing has found a job, in the future you can come be our guest more often, I would also cook some good food for you." Aunt Li happily said.

Yang Chen's face was already red, yet he was still sober, and happily asked: "Oh, Jingjing has found a job? What job?"

"I've been accepted by Zhonghai's Yizhong, to be an English teacher. Due to a form teacher being pregnant, I'm now a temporary form teacher." Li Jingjing quietly smiled.

"A teacher.... and even both an English teacher and form teacher, Jingjing really isn't simple huh." Yang Chen nodded satisfyingly, "The wages are also not low, when the time comes don't forget me, your big brother Yang!"

The Old Li couple also proudly laughed, their late born daughter, finally had a great future now. This naturally made them extremely happy.

Li Jingjing bashfully pouted and said, "Then big brother Yang must come to the school and find me when you're free, otherwise, how can I remember big brother Yang?"

"Alright, I'll definitely go, YiZhong is a well known high school, I've never been there before...." Yang Chen happily replied.

After the meal, Yang Chen was affectionately pulled by Old Li to drink tea and play Chinese chess. To speak the truth, Old Li was a smelly chess player who plays with Yang Chen who had absolutely no idea how to play. While Li Jingjing

filially accompanied her mother in cleaning up the table.

After losing the game of chess, Yang Chen felt that the soup, alcohol and tea didn't mix well in his stomach and told Old Li to wait, he ran towards the toilet, intending to release his floodgates first.

The toilet in Old Li's house was at the back of the house, a separate shack. After walking through the small alleyway, the muddle-headed Yang Chen unsteadily pushed open the wooden door of the toilet.....

“YAAA!!!”

A sharp and panicked sound entered Yang Chen's ears, immediately raising his head, Yang Chen was dumbfounded.

In front of his eyes was Li Jingjing who seemed to have just showered, at this moment this little beauty had nothing on her body. Although the 40-watt light bulb was not very bright, but it was enough to let Yang Chen clearly see that waistline full of youth and vitality. A little patch of black was hanging on the waist, the pepper-like hot breasts of Li Jingjing was hurriedly covered with her hand, yet was difficult to cover it due to its plumpness, becoming round cakes. Slightly below the breasts, was a smooth waistline without excess flesh, Li Jingjing's other hand covered that thick rainforest, with her round thighs tightly clamped on that erogenous zone.

Li Jingjing did not know that this action of hers discernibly increased her allure.

Yang Chen was original dizzy from the alcohol and boosted by the hormones, right now seeing Li Jingjing's underripe yet enticing body, he could not help but swallow his saliva, a part which held violent desires rose.

Chapter 12: I'm Really A Mutton Skewers Seller!

“Yang..... Big brother Yang.....quickly get out....” Li Jingjing turned away, but was afraid of having her round bottom seen, she panicked to the point that she was about to cry.

Listening to the pleas of the young lady which had not the slightest impurity, Yang Chen finally calmed his bloodshot eyes, sucked in a deep breath, suppressed his rash desires, then immediately closed the doors and backed off.

After quietly waiting outside for a while, properly clothed Li Jingjing walked out with her head lowered, with blushing that spread till the young lady's ears.

Yang Chen apologetically said : “I'm sorry Jingjing, I didn't do it on purpose. “

Li Jingjing replied with a mosquito-thin “Yep” and said, “I.....I know....Big Brother Yang is a good person...”

“A good person huh....” Yang Chen muttered softly with a sour smile, then said, “Jingjing, in the future when you earned some money you should buy yourself a good apartment, even a loan is fine, it is inconvenient for a young lady like you to always be living with your parents.”

“Yep....” It is hard to tell whether the girl actually heard what was said, as she possessed an appearance of a wounded little sheep that can arouse pity.

Yang Chen sighed, “It is late, you should go get some rest, tomorrow you have to go to work. As a new teacher you need to produce a good track record. I'll return home after using the toilet. ”

“Yep.....Big brother Yang take care.” The girl's voice was still doughy, yet could really cause a man's bones to numbly melt.

Accidentally seeing Li Jingjing shower made Yang Chen completely sober, heart filled with guilt towards the innocent girl, Yang Chen returned home with farewells from the Old Li couple.

After closing the door, the Old Li couple began to discuss about Yang Chen.

Aunt Li, with some concern said: “ Old man, do you think our Jingjing has fallen for little Yang? why do her eyes seem so cheerful when looking at little Yang?”

“To fancy is good, little Yang and our Jingjing are pretty compatible don’t you think?” Old Li happily said.

“What are you saying, little Yang has a great personality which is a good thing, but isn’t he still a mutton skewer seller? Our Jingjing has become a high school teacher, are you going to let Jingjing marry someone who sells mutton skewers in the future?” Aunt Li angrily said.

Old Li took one drag from his cigarette then unhappily said, “What’s the matter, you look down on us little peddlers? Little Yang helped us so much, if it wasn’t for our family, would he only be selling mutton skewers?”

Upon seeing her spouse get angry, Aunt Li stopped speaking, yet in her heart she had made her decision, she was determined to never allow her daughter be together with Yang Chen, at the most, she would treat Yang Chen to a few more meals, as compensation to Yang Chen.

The old couple yet didn’t know, their treasured daughter Li Jingjing, was currently upstairs by the window stealthily standing, with a blushing face and thumping heart watching Yang Chen leave.

Along the river, Yang Chen purchased a 2 dollars pack of West River cigarettes from a convenience store, and smoked while walking towards his residence.

In his heart, he thought of the time he first returned to the country, the bits and pieces of meeting Li Jingjing and her family, and what started as a silly little brat suddenly became a youthful pretty lady. Unable to help feeling the eighteen changes of a growing woman* and the unpredictableness of the world.

[TL: “女大十八变”, meaning the eighteen of the changes that a girl makes when turning into a woman; blossom into womanhood]

Remembering how at that time it was himself on this riverside that rescued Li Jingjing who nearly got raped by scoundrels, then getting acquainted with Old Li’s family. Perhaps every girl has a hero in their hearts, despite him being a mutton skewer seller, in that girl Li Jingjing’s heart, he was special.

Constantly filled with such thoughts, Yang Chen unknowingly walked to the

river's dock, which under the thinly spread street light's illumination exposed a hazy sense of beauty. The summer breeze blew past, bringing with it a whizzing coolness.

At this time, a big and tall SUV appeared on the road ahead. Yang Chen eyes shined, then looked at the riverside fence, unexpectedly there stood a tall woman in a black dress.

The drifting waves rolled, the street lamp's light dispersed streaks of rosey red, set off a charming white face. A watery pair of eyes stared at the far away indistinct yacht, expressing bits of sorrow. This well-developed figure demonstrated a mature type of charm, ample breasts, round plump butt, packed in a black cotton dress yet still draws people's eyes. Under the slender thighs wrapped with a pair of beige coloured stockings, was a pair of crystal coloured high-heel shoes, a noble and elegant smell diffused from her body.

This was absolutely the best kind of prey for the night. Yang Chen only needed one look. Earlier due to seeing Li Jingjing's naked body which boiled his blood, once again had indications of combusting.

o

"Nice car, never thought that in this place I could see this model of Land Rover which is limited to only 40 in the whole country..." Yang Chen wryly complimented, slowly leaning on the railings.

The beautiful married lady recovered her distant looking eyes, gently turned her head, with eyes that had a few instances of confusion and surprise, but what followed was a graceful and nice smile, "You recognize this car?"

Way more than just recognize, this type of british handmade Land Rovers, I in those years blew up not less than several hundreds..... Yang Chen sourly laughed silently in his heart and at the same time, his face showed content and leisurely said: "Anniversary, Land Rover's 40 year remembrance edition, maximum power of 375 kilowatts, peak torque of 625, 5.0 litre supercharged.... I made no mistake."

"I don't understand a thing you said, I just like this car, so i bought it." The lady stroked down the rising hair, this was a simple movement yet was alluring and enchanting.

“Don’t all ladies like small and elegant sports cars? Porsche 911, Mercedes-Benz SLR, BMW Z4, even the appearance of Audi TT is more well liked compared to Land Rovers. I don’t believe someone who can afford to buy this car can’t afford to buy those cars.” Yang Chen took out a cigarette, since the mature lady in front of him did not reject him, he wouldn’t mind chatting more.

The maiden shook her head, “I do not feel that way, driving a sports car cannot compare to the sense of security driving an SUV gives..... Shouldn’t ladies all protect themselves better?

“Beautiful lady, it seems like you lack a sense of security.” Yang Chen burst with joy in his heart, a seemingly unhappy married lady, this type of lady was the easiest to seduce.

Who could have known that the woman still shook her head, “You’re wrong, I am very safe, the reason I said driving an SUV gives a better sense of security, is merely to give oneself’s heart one more portion of comfort.”

“You’re the one who’s wrong, if you really had a sense of security, right now you should give me a slap and have me beat it.” Yang Chen nefariously smiled, and puffed out a mouth of smoke.

The maiden did not dodge, the cigarette’s pungent smell dissipated in the wind, a pair of shining eyes like stars stared straight at Yang Chen, in the end showing a brilliant smile, “Which family’s young master are you from? If you are thinking of using such words to attract I, Tang Wan’s attention, then you are underestimating me too much.”

“You are called Tang Wan?” Yang Chen silently called out twice, laughed and said: “I’m not any family’s young master, I am merely a mutton skewer seller, if you have time some other day you could come to the west region’s market to find me there.”

“Mutton skewer seller?” Tang Wan seriously evaluated Yang Chen for a few moments, unable to resist, a “puchi” laugh came out. She trembled from it for a moment then said: “Little handsome, are you treating me as a fool or are you fooling yourself?”

I’m really a mutton skewer seller, although I do not have a business license.” Yang Chen said in distress, pondering why now in this world, nobody believes

when the truth is spoken?

§

Chapter 13: Marriage

Tang Wan gave out a cold “hmpf” sound, then suddenly stretched out her hands that were as smooth as teeth, in one movement grabbing onto Yang Chen’s collared shirt button. She charmingly rolled her eyes at Yang Chen and said, “An Italian handmade collared shirt, a specialized in design for royal families yet does not have a brand or logo. However, button is made with South Africa’s blue diamonds, with state of the art polishing technology. This simple piece of clothing, is priced at least 10 million dollars. Did you think nobody would recognize such a product, and think you are wearing an inferior brand shirt with plastic buttons?”

Yang Chen was embarrassed, he did not expect that someone would recognize his shirt’s true value, however he soon turned it to laughter and said: “Miss Tang indeed has great insight, however you are still wrong. This blue diamond was produced in Namibia, and not South Africa.”

“And you still say you’re not any family’s young master? Clothes that use Namibian blue diamonds as buttons, the entire ZhongHai has no more than a few qualified to wear....It is not fun to lie.” Tang Wan squinted her eyes, she already had nothing left to say.

Yang Chen ferociously took a few drags off the cigarette, tossed the cigarette butt into the river, and said in a depressed manner: “Miss Tang, Let us not beat around the bush. It’s true you are beautiful, I, Yang Chen would like to sleep with you, but there’s no need for me to pretend to be a mutton skewer seller to sleep with you, right? I’ve already said I’m just a mutton skewer seller, but who says a mutton skewer seller can’t wear a clothing worth 10 million? Can’t you trust me, and change the subject into something more romantic?”

“That is very crude.” Tang Wan unhesitantly criticized. Then followed with a smile like flowers, “However, I like your straightforwardness, alright, I will temporarily treat you as a mutton skewer seller. However, Mr. Yang, I never intended to sleep with you, and more so wouldn’t sleep with a mutton skewer seller even more, I’m not the slightest bit tempted.”

“Then what did you speak so much to me for?” Yang Chen felt a little depressed, initially thinking that he coincidentally met a prey that would leap into his arms, but who knew the other party had no intentions in this regard.

Tang Wan chuckled, a pair of peaks and ridges shook on her chest, “Mr. Yang, you’re really a reckless man, much more pleasing to the eye than those men who pretend to be refined. It is a pity, I’m not the kind of woman you think I am. The reason I spoke all these words to you, is merely because my heart felt a little stifled earlier.”

“Then?”

“Then, my mood is much better now, I want to thank you for that. If there is fate and we meet again, I’ll treat you to tea.”

Done with speaking, Tang Wan walked towards her Land Rover, stopped halfway, turned around, tenderly smiled and said: “Right, I suggest you do not blow smoke at a lady in the future, majority of ladies aren’t nightclub hostesses, and will not view your actions as polite...” Finished speaking, she swayed her voluminous figure back into the car.

After he saw the Land Rover disappear into the distance like a leopard in the dark, Yang Chen then grudgingly muttered to himself, “Is selling mutton skewers really so mediocre? Do I have to change occupations?”

The next morning, soon after waking Yang Chen heard someone knocking on his room’s door. Yang Chen unhappily got off his bed, and walked to the door in only his briefs. He opened the door and it revealed as expected, the frost faced Lin Ruoxi.

Upon seeing Yang Chen’s muscular upper body, Lin Ruoxi unintentionally blushed, but maintained her poker face and said: “Hurry up and put on some clothes, I’m in a rush.”

Yang Chen scratched his head, “I mean Miss Lin, for a marriage certificate why are you in such a rush? Can’t you wait for me to take a shower and eat breakfast first?”

“That won’t do, I have a meeting at 10.” Lin Ruoxi’s tone did not allow any rejection, “Don’t forget to bring your bankbook and identity card.”

Helpless to the woman's might, Yang Chen put on his sleeved shirt and shorts then followed Lin Ruoxi downstairs, and they got into her red Bentley car together.

Lin Ruoxi took two big bags from the back and tossed them towards Yang Chen, not even turning her head and said: "Change into these, so we aren't viewed as jokes."

Yang Chen only now noticed, today Lin Ruoxi wore a formal OL(Office Lady) suit, the beige colored suit obviously made by the hands of professionals, with flowing lines that covered Lin Ruoxi's enchanting curves, set off the ice-cold yet full of intellectual temperament beautiful face. In the eyes of men was definitely enchanting enough to ruin a country.

"Hehe, wifey, the official marriage is yet to be done but you have already purchased clothes for your husband..." Yang Chen laughed shamelessly, and took out from the large bag a pair of Armani suit and trousers, and also a pair of brand new Pierre Cardin leather shoes. Obviously lots of thoughtful preparation was put in.

Lin Ruoxi seriously drove and pretended not hearing anything, lazy to respond to Yang Chen's rogue tone.

Yang Chen was very nimble, despite being in a narrow seat, he effortlessly changed into this brand new set of luxury clothing, and very narcissistically used the car's mirror to comb his hair. His whole person now looked a hundred times more refreshing.

Although she kept looking forward, Lin Ruoxi couldn't help sneakily peeking at Yang Chen for a few instances. Upon seeing Yang Chen in a western suit and tie, Lin Ruoxi felt her heart beat faster. Although this felt a little shameful, but the man's free and unrestrained look, and eyes which occasionally revealed sadness, all made her a little fascinated. Yang Chen had a much more extraordinary charisma in comparison to the young masters of those wealthy families in this western suit.

Lin Ruoxi comforted herself in her heart saying: At least he is able to pose, and won't humiliate me when we go out.

Speeding throughout, and getting Yang Chen's colored photo done along the

way, the two quickly arrived at the Civil Administration Bureau.

After getting off the car, Lin Ruoxi hesitated for a moment, but still clenched her teeth and hooked Yang Chen's arm, creating an appearance of an innocent and happy girl.

Yang Chen couldn't help but laugh saying: "Good well-behaved wifey, already starting to act from here, very professional."

"You're not allowed to laugh! Play your role properly for we have signed the contract." Lin Ruoxi glared at Yang Chen.

Yang Chen helplessly sighed, allowing Lin Ruoxi to cling onto his arms. Anyway this arm could occasionally rub against Lin Ruoxi's soft and abundant chest, being able to take advantage of this was a good thing.

Lin Ruoxi felt this as well, but angrily clenched her teeth and endured. After all, in the future there would be many days which requires such acting, thus it was necessary to let his bad fella freeload a little.

Walking into the main doors of the Civil Administration Bureau, the two's talented man and beautiful woman(idiom for an ideal couple) looks attracted everybody's attention. Yang Chen, whose whole body wore branded goods seemed cool and free, while Lin Ruoxi naturally was beautiful to the point fish would dive deeper into the water in shame, and birds would fall from forgetting how to fly because of her captivating beauty. In the eyes of the surrounding people they seemed like a match made in heaven.

The Civil Administration Bureau's worker simply verified the two's documents, then quickly carried on with the procedures, with a face full of congratulatory smiles and said to the two: " Congratulations to you both, this is your Marriage Certificate please take good care of it. You two are truly a couple that makes people envy, and will definitely live a long and great life together."

Lin Ruoxi kept hold of Yang Chen's wrist, being stared at by the people in the surrounding made her face feel scorching hot for quite some time. Upon receiving the Marriage Certificate, she felt like she was in a dream for it was so magical.

I actually got married, with a man I've only known for a day and got married....

Lin Ruoxi with confused eyes glanced at Yang Chen, realizing right now Yang Chen also stupidly stared at the Marriage Certificate, spellbound.

Is he also filled with complicated emotions? What is he thinking of now? Does he dislike it, or is he happy? Lin Ruoxi suddenly asked herself these questions, then felt frightened. Why would I care about what he thinks!?

Yang Chen suddenly turned his head, face to face with Lin Ruoxi, evilly smiled then said: "What's the matter my wife? It can't be that you started regretting right after receiving the Marriage Certificate right? For you were the one who forcefully pulled me here."

"You think I'm really willing to marry you?" Lin Ruoxi in a small voice bitterly said: "However you can be at ease, when I Lin Ruoxi decide upon something I never go back, you just need to behave well and coordinate with me to act for these three years. It will be enough if you don't create problems for me."

After the two walked out of the Civil Administration Bureau, Lin Ruoxi released her hand on Yang Chen's arm and returned to a face of frost, "Alright, I've got to go for a meeting, you can go home first."

"Go home? Please don't tell me you want me to walk back....." Yang Chen felt really bitter, this wife of his was too high quality, right after marriage she wanted her husband to walk tens of kilometers home.

Lin Ruoxi took out a card from her leather bag and handed it to Yang Chen, on top of the card printed was a graceful font that had an address: "89 Dragon Garden, Culture Road."

"Since we have already gotten married, then on the surface we need to live together. Otherwise we can't trick others. You should just move in together with me, and quickly move out from that dog kennel of yours." After those words, without even turning back she got on her car and drove away.

Yang Chen laughed in a manner that looked uglier than crying, and mumbled to himself, "In the end, I still have to walk.."

Chapter 14: A New Home

Dragon Garden's entire area was filled with luxury villas. The gap between each villa was about a mile in between, surrounded by clear waters and lush greenery, with European-styled furnishings bringing forth an atmosphere of utmost elegance.

When the villa's security guards saw Yang Chen, suspicion sprouted within them, as they were very curious as to why a rich man was walking in. However, due to his whole body full of branded western clothing, they did not stop him either, saving Yang Chen the effort for a long explanation.

After entering Dragon Garden, Yang Chen had to walk two more kilometers before reaching unit 89. The entire villa's area exceeded 400 square meters in size. This figure was without considering the gigantic swimming pool or the huge garage outside. The Baroque-styled garden was made up of huge and heavy stones to. It was hard to imagine how huge the price tag of this house was.

After ringing the doorbell, the finely carved mahogany door soon opened. The stranger opening the door was a home-clothed middle-aged lady with an apron, with a face that had slight signs of aging. Yet it was maintained very well, not looking old despite probably being 40 to 50 years old. At this moment, seeing Yang Chen, her eyes revealed some happiness and she enthusiastically said: "You must be Young Master*, Miss did say you would come today. Please come in."

[TL: Wang Ma actually calls Yang Chen "Gu Ye""姑爷"= 姑娘+少爷 and so it sounds like Miss' Husband Master instead of Young Master, but Young Master is as close as it gets for the translation in this case.]

Seeing that the middle-aged lady seemed totally uninterested in his background, Yang Chen let loose a little, entered the house, smiled and said: "Elder sister, how shall I address you?"

"My name is Wang Yu Lan, you can simply call me Wang Ma", Wang Ma with open eyebrows and smiling eyes then said: "How can I allow Young Master address me as elder sister? I've watched Miss grow up, it would be more

appropriate to call me Auntie.”

“Wang Ma isn’t old at all! If you walked on the streets, you can definitely capture the hearts of many men.” sincerely said Yang Chen.

There is no woman who doesn’t like being complimented as beautiful, Wang Ma may be middle-aged, but naturally would not be any different. Getting even more joyful, Wang Ma had Yang Chen sit, and happily said: “Young Master, please rest for a while, I would soon be done with the kitchen and we could have lunch. It’s a pity that Miss has a meeting and doesn’t have time to return home...”

“Wang Ma, are you and Lin..... er, Ruoxi the only ones staying here?” Yang Chen eyes wandered around.

The villa had three storeys, modern electronics all over, a set of real white leather sofa, black marble floor, mahogany furniture, and even some big and small paintings by famous artists, and a few blossoming orchids swaying on the window side, appearing simple yet elegant. Looking towards the large rooms on the 2nd and 3rd storeys, Yang Chen felt the greatness of having space.

Wang Ma sorrowfully sighed, “That’s right, with just us two women the house feels strangely deserted. Miss is so busy with work and is not at home all day, usually it is just me alone in this big house. However, it is great from now on, since Miss now has you, our house will finally have a man. It is more proper this way.”

Seeing how contented Wang Ma looked, Yang Chen curiously asked: “Wang Ma, don’t you feel that it’s strange how Ruoxi suddenly decided to marry me?”

“Hehe”, Wang Ma laughed and said: “Young Master, I’ve seen Miss grow up, since young Miss has never had a single boyfriend, despite the fact that those trying to woo her weren’t few. However, Miss never looked at any of them, yet she married you. This must mean that you, Young Master are special. Miss is so intelligent, and I trust Miss’ judgement, so there is nothing to worry about.”

Yang Chen nodded in understanding, yet in his heart softly echoed, Wang Ma wouldn’t possibly have thought, that him and Lin Ruoxi’s marriage was only by contract.

After eating the luxurious lunch, Yang Chen contentedly made a burp, rubbed his round stomach and laughed saying: “Wang Ma’s craft is amazing, the taste is much better than those big restaurants.”

Wang Ma happily said, “Is that so? Then Young Master must eat at home more often in the future, Miss often has emergencies at work and doesn’t return home. The food is cooked yet there is no one to eat it, it is a pity to throw them away.”

“That brat is throwing away heavenly objects, ignore her. Wang Ma can just make good food for me in the future.” Yang Chen pounded on his chest.

Wang Ma knew that Yang Chen was kidding, and happily nodded in agreement.

After cleaning up, Wang Ma took off her apron, and said: “Young Master, let me bring you to your room. If there is anything else you require please tell me and I will buy it for you.

“My room?” Yang Chen blanked out for a moment, then remembered agreeing not to sleep together with Lin Ruoxi.

Wang Ma led the way and said: “Young Master, Miss has thoughtfully chose for you. She says that you are used to sleeping alone, and thus specially prepared a big room for you. She even bought several sets clothes which are inside.”

“Oh is that so? Okay..... Ruoxi is... Pretty thoughtful.” Yang Chen rubbed his nose, even he himself felt that what he said sounded fake.

“Isn’t it? This is the first time I’ve seen Miss do so much for a man. Also, Miss says you are busy with work now, thus the marriage is done first, and the wedding banquet will be done in the future. She was being thoughtful for you.” Wang Ma happily said.

Yang Chen instead had a head full of sweat.

What is this, so that chick had long prepared countermeasures against Wang Ma by pushing all the problems towards me. How busy could selling mutton skewers possibly be?

Entering his room, Yang Chen felt a little surprised, this room was humongous, to the point where it was bigger than the entire apartment he had been renting.

Ceiling-to-floor windows with white curtains swayed at the side, a large king sized bed, a 42-inch Sony LED TV, an Apple computer at the bedside, classical decorated side lamp, and shining parquet floor. Looking towards the wall, there were two huge built-in cabinets, filled with brand new clothes, neckties and leather shoes.

Yang Chen laughed inside.

Seems like my beautiful wife did not mistreat me, as the first apparatus for acting had been completely prepared. “How is it? I hope Young Master is pleased.” Wang Ma enthusiastically said.

“Pleased, very pleased, this is much better than expected, thank you Wang Ma.” Yang Chen nodded.

“Please thank Miss instead, all I did was run some errands.” Wang Ma was already beginning to help secure this couple’s relationship.

Yang Chen understood Wang Ma’s intentions but didn’t blow the bubble, “Wang Ma, I still have several things remaining at my previous home I must retrieve, so I’ll have to make a trip back.”

“That is as it should be, surely some things become a habit to use.”

“However....” Yang Chen awkwardly said : “Wang Ma, do we have any transportation vehicle at home? If there isn’t a car even a bicycle is fine too, to help me get around quickly.

Wang Ma stared at Yang Chen in shock, as if she was looking at something incomparably scary, “Young Master, are you saying that you walked in here?”

“Unfortunately you’ve guessed correctly, Wang Ma.” Yang Chen raised his hands.

Wang Ma didn’t know to laugh or to cry, “Miss is too much, how could she let you, Young Master walk here. Young Master you mustn’t be so casual staying here in the future, and must at least have a car. Young Master, please follow me, our house still has a few cars that are usually idle, you can drive whichever you want out.”

Yang Chen’s eyes lit up, previously seeing Lin Ruoxi drive the luxurious Bentley

Arnage made his hands itch, but he had no money to buy a car. He had been envious all this while, yet now he can get such a car for free?

§

Chapter 15: My Wife Is A Rich Woman

“Oh these cars, Miss usually doesn’t use them. They were all given to her by business partners, Miss has basically never driven them at all, Young Master, if you like any of them, you could just drive off with it.” Wang Ma happily recommended.

Yang Chen, curious about what his beautiful wife does for a living, refrained from asking Wang Ma due to embarrassment. After all, if he didn’t even know that piece of information, wouldn’t this marriage seem a bit too strange? Therefore, he planned to find time and ask Lin Ruoxi herself.

After looking around the garage, Yang Chen finally spotted a relatively normal sportscar, a milky-white BMW M3. However, in fact, this car is already considered one of the best in the city, with a top speed of 300kph.

Yet in Lin Ruoxi’s garage, there really aren’t any cars less eye-catching than this M3.

“This car will do.” Yang Chen said, while pointing at the M3.

Wang Ma a little doubtfully asked: “Young Master, why not pick a better car? This car seems to be the cheapest of the bunch.”

A 1.2 million dollar car was the cheapest, Yang Chen laughed and explained: “This car will do, an eye-catching car isn’t good, it is better not to flaunt wealth and maintain a low profile.”

“No wonder Miss is willing to settle with Young Master, Young Master’s character is really rare. Youngsters nowadays all want to flaunt their wealth, yet Young Master tries to hide it.” Wang Ma nodded in content, then went to the corner of the garage to retrieve the keys for the M3.

Yang Chen deftly got into the car, and the automatic garage door rolled up. Yang Chen then waved goodbye to Wang Ma as the car shot out of the garage like an arrow.

Wang Ma silently watched Yang Chen drive off, sighs and says to herself:

“Youngsters nowadays are really difficult to understand.”

Although Yang Chen hasn't driven in half a year, he didn't feel that his driving skills had deteriorated. The M3's excellent quality showed itself as it flew down Zhong Hai city's expressway like a mirage. Weaving through the traffic as if there were no obstacles, constantly driving above 100kph, this is considered a shocking speed in the city. Occasionally, there would be a few traffic policemen who noticed Yang Chen's excessive speeding, but before they could react he had already whizzed past them.

In less than half an hour, Yang Chen arrived at his own apartment. After going up the floors, Yang Chen found his apartment door open, and frowned. His first reaction was that someone had broken in, but peeking into the apartment, the person he found inside was actually the familiar Li JingJing!

Li JingJing wore a white blouse embroidered with flowers, a cool green short skirt, with her dark hair tied into a ponytail, and a few strands swaying along with the breeze flowing in, she looked youthfully elegant and refined.

At that moment, the girl was earnestly mopping the floor. Although Yang Chen's apartment only had a few things, dust was something it did not lack. Seeing Yang Chen return home, Li JingJing revealed streaks of joy and a flushed face because of the exercise, like a refreshing teenager in summertime.

“Big brother Yang you're home!”

Yang Chen felt a touch of warmth in his heart. Before Li JingJing left for university two months ago, she often came to help clean. Now after returning with a job, she still found the time to help him clean his apartment. With a heart full of pity and guilt for the girl, Yang Chen moved forward to touch Li JingJing's ponytail and says, “JingJing, don't come to sweep this place anymore, I'm moving.”

“Moving?” Li JingJing momentarily stunned, “Big Brother Yang are you leaving Zhong Hai?” The girl panically asked.

Yang Chen thought for a while, and chose to speak the truth, “No, I just got married, and am about to move in with my wife. I will still be in Zhong Hai though.”

Suddenly, Li JingJing's face turned ashen white and some tears started to float

around the surface of her beautiful eyes, yet she immediately pointed her head down to wipe it off. Just from her trembling shoulders, anyone would understand that she had lost her calm.

After the two shared some time in deep silence, Li JingJing raised her head with red eyes, and showed a strong smile, “Congratulations, Big Brother Yang.... sister-in-law she.... must be really beautiful....”

Yang Chen’s heart also trembled a little, but short-term pain is better than long-term pain. Yang Chen believed that Li JingJing has to face this in the end, so he steeled his heart. Listening to Li JingJing’s words, Lin Ruoxi’s beautiful face flashed across his mind and he subconsciously nodded.

A hint of despair flashes in Li JingJing’s eyes, and subsides. She then sourly smiles and says: “Big Brother Yang, you’re really awful, such a big affair yet you didn’t let me know. But I..... I still have to give the two of you my blessing.. I.... I’m leaving now....”

Watching Li JingJing tread down the stairs like a hurt little rabbit, Yang Chen felt terrible in his heart, and says in a hurry: “JingJing, in a few days I will go to Yi Zhong to visit you, work hard.”

(TL: Yi Zhong is the name of the school Li JingJing works at, called 1st Middle, but the author doesn’t specify if it is a high school or junior high or both)

Li JingJing momentarily paused her steps, softly complied, and ran down the staircase.

Waiting till Li JingJing had left for some time, Yang Chen then drew a cigarette out from his pocket, lit it up, and violently smoked a few breaths. The melancholy in his eyes gradually dissipated, and it turned to resoluteness.

Yang Chen was absolutely confident in his memory. When he left home he had definitely locked the door. This meant that the reason Li JingJing had been able to enter was because the door had already been forcibly opened by someone else.

However, who would barge into his house for no reason? Yang Chen thought of two possibilities: First, it could be China’s intelligence agency beginning to investigate him, but that seemed illogical, because if they really wanted to handle him, going directly to him would be more effective. Second, it could also

have been Chen Feng who he had agitated two days ago. Since realizing that entire police force couldn't take him down, thinking of another way would be inevitable.[TL: Chen Feng is the guy who was creating trouble for the street vendors]

“Really, not shedding tears till seeing the coffin.....” Yang Chen stoically says, then tosses away the cigarette and begins to sort out his belongings. Yang Chen rearranged the large chest in his house, stuffed some clothes into his large ragged bag, then proceeded to one of the white walls in the toilet. Yang Chen fiercely threw a punch towards it and a hole appeared in the wall.

Yang Chen retrieved a fist-sized black wooden box, and immediately placed it into the bag with the clothes.

Again speeding, Yang Chen returned to the villa at Dragon Garden. After parking the car, Yang Chen entered the villa from the automatic door. The moment he entered, he saw a beautiful figure lying on the sofa in the living room while a new Korean drama was playing on the huge TV.

With her hair tied up in a bun, and an exquisitely white jade neck that could give a person a thousand dreams, who else could it be other than the newlywed Lin Ruoxi?

Yang Chen revealed a playful smile, it was unexpected that my ice cold wife actually likes watching romantic Korean dramas. At the same time, finding this fun, the pent-up depressed mood turns for the better. He walked up and fiercely grabbed Lin Ruoxi's shoulders, “My good wife, give hubby a kiss!”

Chapter 16: The Father-in-Law Appears

Startled by Yang Chen's sudden appearance, Lin Ruoxi jumped from the sofa and struggled to escape from his arms. She glared at Yang Chen: "You are not allowed to touch me."

"Hey now... You don't have to overreact that much." Yang Chen grimaced while shrugging his shoulders. "I was just teasing you. If I actually kissed you, I'm sure in the middle of the night I'd be hacked into pieces like in the movie *Psycho*."

Lin Ruoxi ignored Yang Chen as she pressed a button on the TV remote. As the TV turned off, her face began blushing knowing that Yang Chen has now figured out her guilty pleasure of watching Rom-Coms. She gave Yang Chen an angry look: "I heard from Wang Ma that you went to pack up your old belongings. Don't you dare bring those dirty things into my house."

"Don't worry, it's just a few articles of clothing," Yang Chen replied while pointing toward a small bag at the foot of the stairs. "Though, my greatest woe is that after living here, what will happen to my mutton skewer stand?"

"You still want to open your stand!?!?" Lin Ruoxi growled as she looked at Yang Chen as if she was staring at a freak. No matter how much she tried to understand him, she could never understand his obsession with selling mutton skewers.

Blinking his eyes, Yang Chen replied "What of it? Our marriage contract didn't bar me from selling mutton skewers right?"

Gnashing her teeth, Lin Ruoxi responded: "In no way would I allow you to sell your mutton skewers. Tomorrow, you must go out and find a job, preferably a respectable job in an office building."

Yang Chen scratched his head while looking perplexed. To be honest, with a degree from Harvard University, which he easily obtained, it would be very easy for him to enter a majority of the top companies, but he is not used to sitting in an office with AC. In his eyes, this type of career could never match the joy of

selling mutton skewers on the street.

“You don’t need to think of an excuse, this is mandatory.” Interjected Lin Ruoxi.

Looking at Ruoxi’s “if you don’t switch your job, you’re dead” gaze while remembering her previous suicide threat, Yang Chen felt a sudden cold sweat and quickly consented “Okay okay... I’ll listen to you. Tomorrow, I’ll go and find a new job.”

Hearing these words, Ruoxi approvingly nodded. Appearing to suddenly remember something, she took out her bag and retrieved a new smart phone from it. Handing it to Yang Chen, she said: “Here, take this phone in case I can’t find you when you go out.”

Yang Chen excitedly received the phone. Seems like this is a profitable marriage: A mansion, a sports car, and even a free phone. Even though this wife looks a bit distant, she is very attractive and well-mannered.

Looking at Yang Chen’s blissful expression, Ruoxi couldn’t do anything other than to give him a contempt look. Stifling a yawn, while making a tired stretching pose, she said: “Well, I’m off to bed. You can go prepare for tomorrow’s job hunt.”

Just as Ruoxi started climbing up the stairs, the doorbell suddenly rang.

Wang Ma, who was busy in the kitchen, dashed out while wiping her wet hands on her apron, and opened the door.

“Master, you’ve come...”

Hearing Wang Ma saying Master, Ruoxi’s face suddenly became pale as she elegantly turned around to look at the middle-aged man walking into the house.

The mature man wore a dark blue shirt while giving off a refined aura with his well-shaved beard. The only way you could tell his age was by the wrinkles near his eyes, and the countless strands of white hair. One can clearly tell that he is Ruoxi’s father from his appearance alone.

At the same moment Lin Kun entered from the door, his expression became extremely ugly. Giving dagger-looks at Ruoxi, he quickly swept his gaze around

and glanced at Yang Chen.

“Father...” Ruoxi weakly called out. His arrival didn’t garner much surprise. It was almost as if he was a stranger without any feelings.

“Father?” Lin Kun coldly laughed: “In your eyes, do you even see me as one? Without any warning, you just married this strange brute. Do you even see me as a father?”

Lin Kun’s roar caused the whole room to shake and echo.

Wang Ma, standing at the wrong place and time, was scared silly. Never would she have expected that her young Miss would marry someone without informing her father.

Ruoxi’s eyes began to turn red as tears started welling up inside. However, she fought back, saying, “As I’ve said before, my marriage is my decision. So what if he is a brute? I would rather marry this guy than Xu Zhihong.”

“You... Is this how you talk to your father?” Lin Kun sneered: “Great, what a waste raising you up. Don’t ever think that just because your grandmother gave you the company, I can’t educate you on what to do! Don’t forget, I still have 30% of the shares in the company. I am a major stockholder. Even more importantly, I am your biological father!”

“Father?” Ruoxi bit her lips and wept: “Ever since I was little, only mother and grandma was by my side. I never even caught a glimpse of your shadow back then. Furthermore, I don’t like Xu Zhihong at all. You don’t have to waste your time thinking about this.”

“You don’t like him? So what? It wouldn’t hurt to be engaged to the next CEO of the Donghua Science & Technology Co. And are you telling me that you actually like this brute?” Lin Kun said while pointing at Yang Chen who was standing still.

From the moment Lin Kun entered till the father-daughter conversation, Yang Chen understood most of what was going on, it seemed like it was because of this ill-tempered father’s forcing, that Lin Ruoxi had chosen to marry him. But of course, the series of unfortunate events which led to their man-woman relationship is a big reason that caused this marriage too.

Being called a “brute” more than once, even the heart of a clay Buddha would feel uncomfortable. Yang Chen, who had not taken the role of that man’s son-in-law, looked at Lin Kun’s finger and said “Uncle, I advise you to put down your finger. It might be dangerous.”

Lin Kun sneered, “You prick, even you are talking back to me? I’m aware of who you are! I have already assigned people to investigate clearly. You’re just a wet market’s mutton skewer vendor. Even though I don’t know what you did to my daughter to make her marry you, but in my eyes you are just a pile of shit... Hey! What are you doing?”

In a flash, Lin Kun, who was acting all high and mighty, suddenly pulled his finger back in pain. Holding his finger, you could see droplets of sweat rolling down his forehead.

“Yang Chen... You...” Ruoxi had seen it clearly. Yang Chen’s hand had instantaneously shot out and pinched Lin Kun’s extended finger. And then he pulled his finger back so quickly that it seemed as if he didn’t move at all.

Yang Chen showed a calm expression, and he turned to Ruoxi while grinning: “It’s nothing serious, I just don’t like it when people point fingers and curse at me. Especially when I already advised them not to. His finger is broken. It’ll take around 10 days to a month to heal.”

If it was the previous him, just now, that man would have had his head broken.

.....

Lin Kun resisted the pain and roared “Just you wait bastard. I won’t let you die a peaceful death. I will find somebody to deal with you...”

“Father... Stop talking... What happened to your hand...” Although Ruoxi hated her father, blood is thicker than water. At this moment, looking at Lin Kun’s painful expression, Ruoxi’s heart soften as she squatted down to help support him.

“You slut! Don’t touch me!” Lin Kun screamed as he suddenly pushed aside Ruoxi, throwing her down on the ground.

“Father! You...” Ruoxi’s complexion turned pale, as she could not believe that her father would actually call her a slut. Ruoxi’s eyes grew dimmer as she is

about to faint.

In the corner, Wang Ma was already in tears, but this was not her place for a servant to speak up. However, upon seeing Ruoxi on the ground crying, she quickly went up to console her.

Lin Kun hobbled back up as he glared at Yang Chen. “Youngster, remember how you hit me. I, Lin Kun, will make sure you are unable to comprehend your death!!”

Noticing Ruoxi who was thrown off to the side, Yang Chen felt his heart being clenched involuntarily. No matter how cold she may be, on pen and paper, she was still Yang Chen’s legal wife. Anger started welling up inside of him.

While Yang Chen’s face seemed tranquil, only his lips betrayed his demeanor, with them arcing up showing a contemptuous look.

“I’ll only say this once. I never go around looking for trouble. I don’t know what happened between you and my wife, and I don’t care to know. But I have a principle. I hate being threatened.”

Without waiting for Lin Kun’s reaction, a lightning-fast palm struck onto Lin Kun’s left cheek.

“Pa!!!”

The whole living room became deadly silent as the crisp sound started echoing around. Just then, the recently standing Lin Kun got slapped unconscious with a single hit.

“Young Master...about this...” Wang Ma stammered as she didn’t notice Yang Chen’s outrageous strength. “How should we deal with this? Look at this commotion.”

As for Ruoxi, she had already collapsed in Wang Ma’s embrace as she looked at these past events with not even a trace of concern.

Yang Chen said in an indifferent tone: “Wang Ma, just take care of Ruoxi. Let me deal with this stupid pig.”

After saying those words, Yang Chen picked Lin Kun from the ground and dragged him out of the house. After having walked a short distance, Yang Chen

arrived at the dumpster site, lightly threw Lin Kun into it, and subsequently closed the iron lid.

§

Chapter 17: Even A Pig Is Cuter Than Him

Lin Ruoxi untied her bunned up hair and let the soft and smooth hair fall on her incomparably beautiful and tender face. However, on that beautiful face was a pale and exhausted expression that arouses pity for her.

Watching Yang Chen enter, Lin Ruoxi raised her head with complicated emotions, she did not ask how Yang Chen handled Lin Kun, and instead showed a smile of self-ridicule: “I’ve become a joke to you, that’s right, I have such a father, I have such a joke of a family, do you find me very pitiful, are you sympathizing with me in your heart? Do not sympathize with me..... I do not need anybody’s cheap sympathy, especially yours.....”

“Who says I pity you?” Yang Chen laughed, drew out a cigarette from his pocket, and enjoyed a breath of smoke.

“You’re not allowed to smoke in front of me.” Lin Ruoxi frowned, and unhappily waved her hand to dissipate the smoke in front of her.

Yang Chen turned a deaf ear to her, and lied on the big sofa at the side, raised his head to smoke and said: “I just want to advise/warn you, not to show me such a pitiful look. At the very least, you know who your parents are, and you have received love from your elders before. Although your family is not that warm, but at least you have a family.

Also, you’re born this beautiful, to the point of being the subject of people’s attention wherever you go, unworried about food or clothes since birth, driving luxury cars at such a young age, you have all that you want..... it is impossible for you to understand, someone who does not even know who his parents are, or where he is even from, someone who has nothing, and how that would feel.....”

Suddenly hearing such words, Lin Ruoxi is stunned, for the first time, Lin Ruoxi seriously gazed into Yang Chen’s pair of eyes, those eyes revealed melancholy and loneliness, making Lin Ruoxi’s heart unconsciously clench itself.

Yang Chen did not stop there, with a soft voice as if he was speaking to himself,

he said, "Since young you're always alone, when hungry, when cold, when bullied, when beat up, all alone..... Without a father or mother, no family, no brothers or sisters, not even friends..... To survive, you fight till you're bleeding all over just for moldy biscuit, to fill up the stomach, you eat grass and tree barks till your intestines bleed..... Nobody would care about your life, nobody would pity you, because you are just a pathetic lifeform abandoned by the world, even a domestically raised dog has a higher status than you....."

Listening to the man's low and hoarse narrative, Lin Ruoxi's eyes turned red again, not for herself, but for that pathetic lifeform.

"I'm sorry," Lin Ruoxi lowered her head, and softly said: "I didn't know your childhood was so tough....."

Yang Chen lowered his head, and gradually revealed that usual undisciplined smile, "My good wife, I made it up, you actually believed it?"

"You....." Lin Ruoxi raised her head, she was just feeling sad for him, then this rogue actually said he made it up, Ruoxi immediately turned angry, "How can you be like that!"

"Hehe, look at you, this angry face is so much more beautiful than the crying face you had earlier." Yang Chen praised.

Lin Ruoxi felt warmth in her heart, she understood that Yang Chen did it to divert her attention and clear away the unhappiness, but she was unable to say any words of gratitude. She looked at Yang Chen as if nothing happened, "Since you were lying to me, then where are your parents? Our marriage is only by contract, but if your parents suddenly appear, then things would get complicated."

Yang Chen's two fingers toyed around with the cigarette butt, and he plainly smiled, "There was one thing I did not lie to you about previously, I really do not know who my parents are, I was separated from them before I was five years old, this name is all I could remember, I'm an orphan."

Hearing Yang Chen casually mention that he is an orphan, Lin Ruoxi felt sour in her heart, she suddenly thought of consoling him, yet doesn't know how to, struggling internally, she nodded, then remained silent.

After the two shared silence for a while, Lin Ruoxi finally spoke: “Yang Chen, there are some things I need to make clear to you, after all we signed a contract, you have the right to know the reasons this situation came to be.”

Yang Chen frowned and said: “Are you talking about the matter regarding that stupid pig of a father forcing you to marry?”

“You are not allowed to call my father a stupid pig.....” Lin Ruoxi was a little peeved, “If he is a pig, then ain’t I also a pig.”

“Hehe, my family’s little Ruoxi is so pretty, even if she is a pig she would be the cute and sweet-smelling kind.”

“You are the pig.....” Lin Ruoxi rolled her eyes, without any anger, she returned to the original topic saying, “My father holds 30% of the company’s stocks, and is a major shareholder, second only to me, but this isn’t the main point, after all before my granny passed on she handed 60% of the stocks over to me, I have absolute control over the company. However..... in my father’s hands, there is the ownership of an old villa....”

“Is that old villa important to you?” Yang Chen doubtfully asked.

“Extremely important.....” Lin Ruoxi’s eyes revealed an expression of beautiful reminiscence, “In my childhood, there was only my granny and mother to accompany me, I grew up there. My mom and dad’s marriage was merely for money and profit, my dad didn’t love my mom, he is a playboy, up till now he is still the same.....” After saying all this, Lin Ruoxi’s eyes showed traces of abhorrence, “Although he is never at home from day to night, he is still the owner of the house. Naturally, when granny passed on, he never allowed me to return, and because he lives a life of debauchery, his finances are nearly depleted, and he’s preparing to sell off the villa.....”

“What does this have to do with our marriage?” Yang Chen boringly asked.

Lin Ruoxi coldly rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, “I want to take back the villa from him, but he isn’t willing to give it to me, I offered much higher than the market price, and he still isn’t willing to sell it to me. He only has one condition, which is to have me marry Xu family’s young master. He clearly has received benefits from the Xu family.....”

“The father even needs to use coercion to make the daughter marry, in my opinion he is no stupid pig, even a pig is cuter than him.” Yang Chen seriously shook his head.

Lin Ruoxi did not care about Yang Chen’s reaction, and continued with: “The Xu family’s Xu Zhihong has always been pestering me, but I’m not willing to go against the Xu family, after all the Xu family is one of the top five strongest families in Zhong Hai, we can’t afford to offend them, therefore.....”

“Therefore you decided to marry me, getting rid of that Xu family’s brat from having any more ideas, first getting through that obstacle, then thinking of a way to take back the real estate from your stupid pig of a father?”

“That’s right.....: Lin Ruoxi wearily nodded, in recent days, her mind has been boggled over this problem. A young lady merely in her twenties, already carried such a heavy burden.

Yang Chen sighed and said: “Geez, this idea of yours cures the symptoms but not the disease, in the end you still have to face pressure from the Xu family and your father, that..... that indecent thing.”

“I’m not able to care about that, I can only take a step at a time.....” Although Lin Ruoxi’s voice was very soft, her tone was incomparably determined.

Yang Chen stood up, picked up his brand new phone, and quietly headed towards the door.

Lin Ruoxi frowned and said: “Where are you going?”

“I’m going to a bar, to look for women.....” Yang Chen looked back, with a face full of seriousness.

Chapter 18: Charming Rose

Bar street is extraordinarily quiet during the day, with only a few cats and dogs prowling the streets, very few people and vehicles pass by, which is a stark contrast to the hustle and bustle at night.

Yang Chen pushed open the main door to Rose Bar, and greeted the napping bartender Little Zhao. Then strolled directly to the passage at the back of the bar.

Several of the waiters, who noticed the arrival of Yang Chen, did not obstruct him, and instead greeted him with respect. They clearly knew the relationship between Yang Chen and Rose was not ordinary.

The passage behind the bar was strangely over fifty meters long. At the end of it, stood two tall men in suits, guarding the exquisite wooden door three metres behind them. When the two noticed it was Yang Chen that came, they neatly bowed immediately, and followed with a welcome gesture.

Yang Chen nodded, walked forward to the flower-carved wooden door and opened it. A natural fragrance burst forth from the inside, bringing with it a slight scent of lavender.

This is a surprisingly humongous room, with smooth brown parquet flooring, black marble walls, and in the middle was a huge 7-foot wide bed on a leather frame. Coffee-colored decorations gave the room some dark charm, revealing a somewhat low profile elegance. On one side of the room is a full glass door, outside the glass door, is an open air swimming pool and a small garden.

It's difficult to imagine, that at the back of a noisy bar, is actually a quiet sanctuary—here, is Rose's "home".

From the moment he entered the room, Yang Chen subconsciously felt a chill, and at the same time without hesitation, he stretched his right hand out to parry.

"Hu!" A sharp sound cut through the air, a white hand wielding a sharp and

cold dagger suddenly appeared 3-inches away from Yang Chen's face, but it was perfectly blocked!

With the sneak attack blocked, the dagger in that hand rotated in a flash, and with a movement as smooth as flowing water, it once again pierced towards Yang Chen's ribs!

Yang Chen leisurely stuck his hand to that smooth warm arm, gently gripped it, and pushed it outwards. The hand wielding the dagger was no longer able to move an inch closer to Yang Chen's body.

The sneak attacker realized that she did not have enough strength, and lifted her small foot to strike the back Yang Chen's waist. Unexpectedly, as if he had foreseen all these movements, Yang Chen pushed down the arm with the dagger in one move!

The small foot wasn't completely raised yet, but the dagger had already turned into a weapon blocking the foot's path.....

"I'm not playing anymore!"

Rose unhappily pouted, and casually tossed the dagger on the floor, "It's always the same, I really don't know how a monster like you trained, you're even younger than me yet your skills are so sick!"

Yang Chen released Rose's soft arm, that delicate feeling made it difficult to part with, he then turned around with an expression of a smile yet not a smile and said: "Not bad, much quicker than last month, this improvement rate is considered extremely fast."

"But in front of you, I still lose in one move....." Rose rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, and gracefully sat on the huge bed. As this was her room, Rose was dressed in an incomparably casual fashion, wearing a white lacy nightgown made of silk, that loosely covered her seductive figure.

The V neckline on her chest, is raised high by a plentiful twin peaks, from the cleavage a black chiffon bra is spotted, struggling to hold on to the two lumps of pink flesh. The lower half of the nightgown is surprisingly short, and only covered her round bottom, while the smooth white thighs hung outside like fruits, glowing with teeth-like luster.

Yang Chen's gaze involuntarily moved towards the area between Rose's thighs, springtime sultriness rippled from there, it was actually also a pair of black chiffon panties. Vaguely, a few strands of black grass appeared before his eyes.....

(TL: Yes, black grass I triple-checked)

Rose's eyes revealed pride, due to certain reasons, this man who made her so devoted had been trying to keep distance, but presently it seemed like he does not have much resistance against her body. While secretly happy in her heart, she throws an even more flirtatious gaze, with limpid eyes that could hook souls away.

"Yang Chen..... is big sis pretty....."

"Pretty....." Yang Chen swallowed his saliva, he felt his little brother had completely turned high-spirited and valiant. God must have made a mistake. This woman must have come from hell, didn't they say only devils have such a figure?

"Wanna..touch....?" Rose blinked, with one hand she slowly pushed the strap off, revealing a white and tender chest, her pair of thighs also spread a little, allowing the hazy beauty at the base of her legs become a little clearer.

Yang Chen sucked in a deep breath, despite him having seen a numerous amount of beauties, and the even more world-breaking beautiful face of his wife, Lin Ruoxi, the Rose in front of him was still top grade despite her beauty being slightly inferior, even without mentioning that charming temperament, that figure was such a ripe peach. The current Rose was like a red rose exuding a fragrance with sweet nectar that causes dizziness.

(TL: The last sentence may look a little silly, as Rose's actual name is a species of rose, in chinese its QiangWei '蔷薇' a.k.a Rosa Multiflora. If the name QiangWei is preferred over Rose do let us know, the name stuck because the previous translator used this name instead of the chinese name.)

Yang Chen slowly approached till he's right in front of Rose, and slowly leaned towards her. He stared deep into Rose's enchanting peach flower eyes, and suddenly made a naughty laugh, "Big sister Rose, I really want to touch, but if I do, you wouldn't grab a dagger and chop off my hand would you?"

“Am I able to chop it?” Rose charmingly said.

“You’re too alluring, my bones are all turning soft, perhaps at that moment I would be powerless.”

“Then would you like to try?” Rose licked her lips, and said with a lazy and sultry tone.

Yang Chen sucked in a breath of Rose’s smell which seemingly exuded a flowery aphrodisiac, but revealed exceptionally clear eyes, “Is there anything I need to do in exchange?”

Right after those words, Rose’s originally seductive eyes lost all colour, and instead revealed some disappointment, rejection, pain, and resentment..... the myriad of complicated feelings suddenly made Rose laugh crazily, “Haha, Yang Chen, so this is what you see me as.....”

“What do I see you as?” Yang Chen playfully laughed.

“Do you feel that the reason I keep trying to seduce you to bed, is to make use of your strength to help achieve my goals?” Rose forthrightly said.

“That’s right, your strength is frightful, I’ve never met someone who is able to show me the meaning of invincible like you do.....” Rose said while slipping her blouse strap back on, once again covering the beautiful exposed skin, she faced Yang Chen and softly said: “At the same time, I need you. Despite the appearance my Red Thorns Society and my father’s West Union Society being the two biggest underworld gangs in the west, fact is my Red Thorns Society is still too young. If we truly go all out against each other, the West Union Society might lose a portion of its people, but our Red Thorns Society will definitely be completely annihilated.”

Speaking till this point, Rose’s lovely face reveals some cold allure, “Yang Chen, do you remember the night we first met..... That night, I was ambushed, and my nearby subordinates were all wiped out, I was alone desperately trying to escape on the streets.....”

Yang Chen quietly listens and nods slightly. In his mind, the scene of that night also gradually surfaces.....

Chapter 19: Objects Like Bullets

At the break of dawn, only a wolf-fang like moon hangs in the sky, but at this moment the fanged moon, seems scarlet.

On a quiet street in the Western region, an exhausted figure fiercely flees out of an alley, she wore tight leather clothes that outlined her perfect curves, at this moment there were several cuts on her arm, with dark red blood seeping out.

She holds a cold dark dagger tightly in her hand, which looks grim yet bright under the moonlight, the residual blood on it is proof that it recently stabbed into somebody's flesh.

“Miss, there's no need to run anymore.....” a deep voice was transmitted from the warehouse in front of the woman.

At the same time, the woman stops her tracks and warily stares at the numerous shadows walking out, there are at least ten of them.

The leading man's head is bandaged, with a very rough face, wearing a big black coat, toying with a locally made Glock 37 pistol in his hand, blocking the road ahead without hurry or delay.

“Miss, your skills are indeed terrifying, having never missed a bullet, killing off thirty of our brothers all by yourself, and still able to flee until here.....” The man slowly said emotionlessly: “However, Miss, the ambush we specifically set up for you, has long anticipated this, so we waited for you to run out of bullets, and so now we have appeared.”

“Blackbear, I've treated you well in the past, why must you collude with my father to go against me?” The woman breathlessly pants, after consecutively killing tens of enemies, her subordinates were already wounded or dead, and she too is completely spent.

The man code-named Blackbear laughs out loud, “Miss, it doesn't matter what disputes happened between you and Boss. I, Blackbear's life was given by Boss, naturally I would loyally do Gang Master's bidding. Big Miss has been kind to me

in the past, but from the moment Big Miss left West Union Society to establish Red Thorns Society, Miss has become Boss' enemy. Therefore, you are naturally my enemy, and there's no space for affection left."

"My father is autocratic, and does business devoid of conscience, even the underworld is ashamed by him. He also doesn't treat all of you well, in his eyes, all of you are just the dogs he is raising, so many elders and brothers are willing to quit with me, why are you so persistent and stubborn?" The woman knows she already no longer has the strength to withstand the gunfire of more than ten people, and could only make her final attempt to persuade them.

Blackbear shakes his head, expression as cold as before, "Miss, before I send you off, I'll give you one sentence — a triad can be inhuman, but still must be loyal....."

The moment the words were spoken, Blackbear stretches out a finger ahead, the many men behind him raises their firearms, with their muzzles pointing at the woman ten metres ahead.

In that life and death moment, at the time when all gunners are ready to pull the trigger, a ghost-like magnetic male voice appears in everybody's ears.....

"Hey bros, it's fine that you all were disturbing me watch the moon, but you can't possibly be intending to have more than ten men shoot at a girl right? When it comes to men shooting women, other than the gun below, you're not supposed to casually use any other, everybody look! She's so beautiful....." within the words, is a voice full of regret.

"Who are you!" Blackbear vigilantly looked all around, yet he couldn't even find a shadow.

The woman who originally awaited her death suddenly widened her eyes, watching at the space above in disbelief!

A figure falls from the sky like a ghost in front of the dozens of gunmen, just like a vampire in European myths, in the enchanting moonlight, quietly opening their huge black bat wings, and extending their sharp claws.

This is a young man with a face that seems a little lazy, a little jocular, a little curious, but most of all, is disdain.

Blackbear doesn't like this type of gaze, but his bones produce a trace of fear, "What are you!?"

The young man does not reply, and instead turns his head to ask the woman, "If I help you take care of them, can you promise me one thing?"

"I can, no matter what it is....." The woman's pale face from blood loss turns a little red at this moment, she could imagine what a man would want after saving a woman, including sacrificing her own body, but right now she doesn't have any other choice. Even she does not understand why she believes this strange unarmed man can save her feeble life from the dozens of gunmen!

"It doesn't matter who you are, you must die....." Blackbear was angry, he hates being ignored, and was the first to point his gun at that man.

"Bam!!!"

At the same time the gunfire appears in the muzzle, the man disappears. When he reappears, one of the man's hand is already gripping onto Blackbear's head, and he lightly twists it.....

"Ka.....Ka!"

Blackbear feebly falls to the ground, with both eyes angrily open, full of disbelief and dissatisfaction..... He did not even have the time to react, and his neck was already broken!

All the other black-clothed gun wielding men were frightened, the society has numerous skilled people, Blackbear, who emerged from the underground boxing world, was mysteriously killed while pulling the trigger!

"How did this stupid bear say it earlier, that's right.....I'll give you people one sentence, something like bullets, is only effective against weaklings....."

The moment the man finished speaking, his body once again turns into a blur, charging into the dozens of men in the dark. Every time he nears one, he hits one! His hand might be smacking the head, or pinching the neck, or even punching the chest, as long as a man is hit, that man instantly falls to the ground.

The woman watching this scene close by struggles to understand what was

happening, only by looking at the wounds of these thugs, they unexpectedly all died instantly by inhuman deaths, either by crushed heads, broken necks, or shattered chests!

If at the point of this man's arrival the woman imagined this man in front of her as a hero saving a beauty, then at this moment, this man in front of her is simply the god of death!

That's right, she has been saved by a death god-like man, and even agreed to whatever he requests!

In fact, at that moment this woman was thinking, even if she did not agree in the beginning, she still felt that she couldn't resist against him, a human may say "No" to other humans, but can't say anything close to "No" to a "God"!

After ending this battle without any suspense in breath, the young man claps his hands and slowly walks towards the woman, under the moonlight, he grins, as if he does not feel anything he should from the slaughter he just did, "My name is Yang Chen, what's your name beautiful?"

"Rose....." Rose said absentmindedly.

"Rose..... Good name" Yang Chen laughs, scratching his head with an embarrassed expression, "Err.....Miss Rose, I'm going to state my request....."

"Please..... Please speak....." Rose lowered her head, preparing herself for getting slaughtered, with her heart involuntarily beating faster.

Yang Chen seriously said: "Miss Rose, I hope..... You don't speak to anyone about what happened today, I don't want to get into trouble with a gang, I beg you....."

Beg? He is begging me?

Rose raises her head in shock, in this moment, as if the world froze over, only the man in front with the awkward smile is left, with a trace of honesty, and a trace of warmth.....

Chapter 20: Monkey King And His Mate

Warning!!! NSFW for fiery entanglement.

Memories are like wine, no matter how much time passes, they both remain fragrant.

Rose and Yang Chen's first meeting was both bloody and dramatic.

When Rose's feminine voice finished narrating those memories, Yang Chen was a little speechless, half a year ago, these two people, through that coincidence became acquaintances. From that point on, the occasional casual exchange, developed into a delicate relationship, a little distant, a little ambiguous, a little exciting.

Playing with her long black hair, Rose hugged her knees, smiled intoxicatingly and said, "Yang Chen, before you appeared, do you know what I was thinking of?"

"What?"

"I recall the fairy tales my mother used to tell me when I was a child. In those stories, whenever a weak princess was in danger from a fiendish villain, a knight in shining armor would always appear and rescue her from the depths of misery. In the end, the prince and princess lived happily ever after. I always thought that that line was senseless, but you made it all come true." Rose said, with her happy eyes, tenderly looking at Yang Chen

Yang Chen touches his nose, "I did not expect you to have such a sensitive and childish side."

"Hehe....." (Note: In chinese, 呵呵 can also be sarcastic as in a cold laugh)
Rose lightly laughs, "How do I put it..... I know that I'm no princess, and you are no knight in shining armor..... yep, not even a knight in shitty armor, there

isn't even a horse or armor. You just fell from the skies like a ghost. However, at that time I felt that, all these weren't important.....

I just thought, if only there's someone like that beside me in the future. He doesn't need to protect me all day, or always make me happy..... as long as, at the time when I can't walk anymore, support me a little, when I'm hurt, provide me a chest to snuggle to, allowing me to not be so helpless, not be so lonely, that is all I want....."

"Rose....." Yang Chen extends out his hand, stroking her moist and delicate cheek, "I'll be honest with you, I'm not a good person, in the past, the number of women who I had relations with reached 800 if not 1,000. As I have said before, you don't need a strong helper, with your circumstances, perhaps finding an honest, reliable man who wholeheartedly loves you will be for the best....."

"That's no longer possible." Rose's eyes turned a little mischievous, "Yang Chen, do you know the relationship between the monkeys and their king?"

"Group of monkeys? Their king?" Yang Chen was puzzled, and asked: "What are you trying to say?"

"In a group of monkeys, the king is the strongest male. All the female monkeys in the group become that monkey's mating partner as the instinct of the female is to choose the strongest mate, this way, their offspring will have better genes.

Like monkeys, throughout history, people in human society have also behaved this way. Why do you think men with power have had numerous wives and concubines? Even those forced to become his mate, do you think they're actually unwilling? Since they can have the best, why should they settle for the mediocre?"

Yang Chen not knowing whether to laugh or cry responded, "From this, have we become monkeys?"

"I was just using an analogy. I want you to know, from the moment we met, in this life there will never be another man in my eyes..... perhaps you aren't the world's strongest, but, you are the strongest in my heart....."

Rose's gaze gradually became resolute, staring straight at Yang Chen, "I love you, Yang Chen."

“.....”

Staying silent for over a minute, the smile on Yang Chen’s face gradually turned stronger, somewhat relieved, and somewhat playfully he said “You are really a stupid woman.”

Rose’s incomparably perturbed look, now showed the colour of happiness, she shook her head and said: “So what if I’m a stupid woman, I don’t regret anything!”

“Do you know what my original purpose for coming was?” Yang Chen’s gaze moved up and down, as if trying to pry into the scene underneath Rose’s nightgown with his eyes.

Although Rose was mentally prepared, it all flew out the window with Yang Chen’s undisguised lascivious gaze, as she still blushed and her heart pounded hard, revealing a rare shy appearance, “You..... what do you want to do?”

Yang Chen slowly closed in on Rose’s beautiful little earlobe, and gently bit on that tender piece of flesh.....

“Yiiiiiii.....”

As if electricity passed through her body, Rose leaned onto Yang Chen’s chest like she was melting, and starts to pant.

“Today I, came here to eat you up, you pink and tender female monkey.....”

Not waiting for Rose to react, Yang Chen gave out a pent up groan, fiercely hugged Rose’s small waist, and tossed this soft to the bone figure into the middle of the bed!

Rose, stunned by this sudden blessing, shut her eyes, allowing Yang Chen to stroke and knead her body, kissing it, while her two little hands tightly gripped the bed sheets.....

The smooth silk nightgown was torn away from the body by two rough hands, the snow white skin was exposed to the air, diffusing a scorching charm.

As if he couldn’t let go of a single inch of skin, Yang Chen’s fiery kissing started from the little navel, and glided upwards along the smooth belly, then he

unhesitantly unclasped the black chiffon bra, placing the two D-cup or above tender flesh into his mouth, continuously nibbling and sucking it.

Perhaps it has been too long since he clear-headedly enjoyed such a ripe woman's body, Yang Chen felt his boiling blood was difficult to suppress.

“Really fragrant.....”

Rose, who usually took the initiative is now like a shy teenager. Upon hearing such blatant praise, her blush only got deeper, and she was completely unable to retort.

Finally, when Yang Chen's lips kisses Rose's cherry lips, like lightning and fire, two wet tongues intertwine around each other nonstop. Rose's sweet juices led Yang Chen to search for it endlessly, to the point Rose had difficult breathing and only then does Yang Chen unwillingly kiss other places.

Rose was completely lost within her first fiery entanglement, her body soft like it's made of water, with every part of it turning into a sensitive nerve ending, a mere touch, allowed the flooded wet marshes to flow even more.

Once Yang Chen released the two's bodies from all constraints, one of his hands dug for Rose's secret garden, the wet to flooding nectar once again caused Yang Chen's hormones to accelerate!

“Oh? Rose my darling, so you are this sensitive, the amount of water below could be used to shower.....”

“Wuu.....” Unable to curb with the shame Rose turned away, she has never experienced such a situation and was totally unable to speak, so she could only vaguely protest.

Yang Chen who was unable to endure any longer no longer spoke, he drew out his long fierce-looking erected dragon head, and fiercely barged into Rose's tender flower bud.....

Rose felt as if her low half was being torn off, that moment of pain accompanied by long-awaited happiness, made her release two streams of tears, and what followed was instead wave after wave of innumerable impacts.....

For a time, the room's temperature sharply rises, the man's deep breathing

and the lady’s staggered wails reverberate through the room.

§

Chapter 21: Stupid Woman

After about an hour, the couple finally calmed down after rolling around the big bed, they used a big blanket to cover the mess, and snuggled with each other.

It seemed that Rose had yet to recover her senses as her whole body leaned weakly onto Yang Chen's chest, her two lumps of tender flesh squeezed each other, displaying an erotic sight.

The woman who experienced the humid rainfall at that point seemed extraordinarily enchanting, she gently clawed at Yang Chen's chest, and somewhat coquettishly said: "So it turns out doing this thing is this tiring, it's better not to do it in the future."

"Up to you," Yang Chen grabbed onto the rare beautiful shoulders, and evilly said: "If you won't do it, I can still find other ladies to do."

"You have no conscience, mentioning other women right after tormenting me!" Rose doesn't know to laugh or to cry and gave Yang Chen a slap, then immediately followed with a question of curiosity: "By the way, the reason you came here today, can't truly be to..... to do that right.....?"

Yang Chen stretched out a hand and pinched Rose's tender face lightly, "You could say it's a yes, yet also say it's a no."

"What do you mean?" Rose considered herself intelligent, yet she couldn't understand what was going on in the mind of the man she loves.

Yang Chen got up from the bed, flipped his pants around and drew out that pack of poor quality cigarettes, lit up one of them and enjoyed blowing a few smoke rings, then comfortably smiled and said: "The reason it's a yes, is because you indeed attract me, yep..... Since long ago I've wanted eat up the free little fat sheep you are. But you know, because your background is a little troublesome, eating you up is the equivalent to the end of my normal and relaxed lifestyle. Therefore, I had to forcefully endure my hunger."

Rose nodded her head in understanding, “I know, you aren’t willing to get involved with the West Region underworld conflicts, while I’m the Red Thorns Society’s president, getting together with me, is the same as going against the entire West Union Society. It is only natural that you aren’t willing to accept me, but why have you now..... could it be now you plan to.....?”

Seeing Rose’s hesitant way of speaking, Yang Chen laughed and said: “You don’t need to think so hard, that’s right, because of some distasteful behaviors, I am now extremely disgusted by your dad’s West Union Society. Or you could say, it’s a few members in the West Union Society causing my days become a headache to pass, and so I thought, rather than hiding around like the other old guys, why not turn the entire West region into your territory. Although that would take some effort, and have several minor repercussions, but.....” At this point, Yang Chen greedily swept his gaze onto Rose’s sexy figure, licked his lips and said: “But, since I could wipe out those pests, and also eat up a *stupid woman* like you, I’m more than happy to.”

Being called “stupid woman” by her lover, made Rose unable to endure from rolling her charming eyes, “So there’s such a reason, seems like you came here today to claim down payment.....”

After finding out Yang Chen’s aim, Rose didn’t ask Yang Chen what his plans were, and wasn’t worried about him either, as of that moment, Rose had already determined that the end of the battle between the two big societies of the West Region is near.

This is perhaps one of the reasons why Yang Chen likes this woman so much, if she was merely a beauty, then Rose would be the same as the other girls he played with, and he would end the relationship after intercourse. However, Rose is obviously a woman who knows how to make a man happy. She believed in Yang Chen’s abilities, things that Yang Chen does not want to say, she wouldn’t ask, if Yang Chen wants to keep the listener in suspense, she would conform to him by appearing interested.

When Yang Chen does not come to meet her, she would not disturb Yang Chen for no reason, and would only silently await for him at a quiet place. When Yang Chen comes to see her, she would then passionately throw herself at Yang Chen, letting her man know, how much she missed him.....

The more Rose holds herself back like this, without any desires or demands, the more difficult Yang Chen finds it is to part with her.

The truth is Yang Chen also pondered whether the situation with Chen Feng was merely an excuse he convinced himself with. If the status quo continued a little longer, perhaps even if West Union Society did not offend him, he would likely destroy them just because of Rose, for she is his close confidante and lover.

After the two shared another hot kiss, the skies outside have darkened, and the lights of the city began lighting up.

Seeing that it was about time, Yang Chen no longer procrastinated, and got up to put on his clothes.

Rose originally wanted to help, but did not expect the moment she stood up, a sharp pain made her crease her eyebrows instead. She bit her lips, and said with a weird voice: "It's all your fault, you've made me all swollen."

"Hey....." Yang Chen awkwardly laughs and says: "I saw that you didn't bleed, and thought you were alright, it can't be that this was your first time?"

Rose was so angry that her face turned white, "That hymen of mine was accidentally torn while I was doing splits in my childhood, what about it, you think I'm loose?"

"No no no....." Yang Chen hurriedly laughed and said: "My dear darling Rose, I was just wondering how you normally curb your demands. That part of yours is so tight I can't even pull it out, how could it be loose, hehe....."

After hearing Yang Chen's embarrassing words, Rose felt like laughing yet also felt angry, so she simply pulled the blanket over her face and no longer cared about Yang Chen.

Yang Chen lifted the blanket and smiled in satisfaction, and while quickly walking towards the door he seemed to have remembered something important, and asked: "Rose darling, my wife wants me to go find a job, and it must be an upright one. I'm thinking of choosing a leisure and unconstrained job, but I'm not familiar with the companies in Zhong Hai, which would you say is suitable?"

"YOUR WIFE!?" Rose's head popped out of the blanket like a bullet, with a pair of huge eyes, "Since when did you have a wife?"

“Sigh, a living buddha, with a poker face all day, we just got the marriage certificate today, the circumstances aren’t convenient to speak of, but I am now married.” Yang Chen shook his head in distress.

Rose’s expression changed ten thousand times in a single moment, and said with an aggrieved tone: “Although I’ve never thought of being the legal wife, but you don’t need to strike me so hard right? I’ve become the mistress so fast.”

“You don’t want to be the legal wife? Why?” Yang Chen curiously asked.

“Being the legal wife is not suitable for me, after all I’m someone who lives in the dark, and cannot openly appear in public, also..... I don’t look like a good wife and a loving mother at all, am I right? My good hubby.....” with that, Rose glamorously rolled her eyes at Yang Chen.

“You alluring evil spirit,” Yang Chen nearly wanted to draw his gun to battle again.

After delicately laughing for a while, Rose didn’t seem to mind Yang Chen’s marriage too much, she thought for a moment, and suggested: “If you like to see beauties, and want freedom, then go to Yu Lei International, they specialize in the fashion industry and cosmetics. Within Zhong Hai, and within the entire country, they are considered a huge company. I saw on the news that Yu Lei International’s Public Relations department is hiring, and is accepting both male and female applicants. I heard many males are even rushing to apply.”

“Public Relations department? Men applying?” Yang Chen understood in a flash, and hurriedly asked: “So it seems this Yu Lei International has plenty of beauties huh?”

“Yep, good treatment, good welfare, and most importantly Yu Lei International is considered the company with the most beauties in the entire Zhong Hai, after all they do fashion and cosmetics, I think this is what you want hubby.....” Rose revealed a “I know you very well” expression.

Yang Chen wasn’t embarrassed, and nodded in gratification, “Great suggestion, great suggestion, the salary isn’t important but the environment is, yep..... I’ll go do some research and apply tomorrow.”

When Yang Chen walks out of the room, Rose who is on the bed watches the

door close and sighs. What Rose doesn't know is, when Yang Chen walked a short distance from the room, he smacks his chest, and whispers in relief: "How dangerous, keeping a mistress makes my heart tremble in fear."

§

Chapter 22: Moment of Life and Death

After walking out of Rose Bar, Yang Chen rushed home with his car, but almost took the wrong route, because Yang Chen is still not accustomed to having moved to Dragon Garden. When he thought of how he has to face Lin Ruoxi's pretty yet frosty little face at home, Yang Chen unexpectedly looked forward to it. His wife constantly gives him the urge to tease her, as if they were enemies in their previous life.

The car drove past the suburbs, then reached the highway entrance, Yang Chen suddenly noticed the car behind him shooting its high beams at him.

Frowning, Yang Chen chose to shift to another lane, but who could have known, right after shifting lanes, another car behind him began shooting its beams at him, the rear mirror of the car reflected the intense light.

At this time there is very low traffic on the suburb's roads, and it is also a one-way dual-lane road, Yang Chen gloomily discovered that he has been marked by a driving club.....

However, a BMW M3 all in all isn't an average car, it is practically a top tier car amongst production vehicles, and is not easily overtaken by normal cars, these driving club members obviously don't have an ordinary background.

As expected, without waiting for Yang Chen to think of how to deal with them, the two cars overtook him separately from left and right !

The two car shadows suddenly show their strength, one black and one white, at the speed of 120 the BMW M3 is ruthlessly left behind, then, the two cars line up to block the M3!

Yang Chen finally saw these two cars clearly, if he didn't see he wouldn't know, yet seeing them gave him a shock. It's actually a Ferrari F430 and a BMW M6! Both of these two cars could defeat the M3 Super Coupe. Although among Ferraris, the F430 is only a mere improvement to the F360, and belongs to the entry class of Ferraris, but in the end it is still a Ferrari, a top speed of 320kph is not achieved by boasting, it is made by the roars of the engine!

As for the BMW M6, although it is only 3 numbers more than the M3, it belongs to the BMW 6 series, how could a 5.0L displacement engine be easy to deal with? It's price tag alone is over 700,000, it's an absolute luxury product!

Yang Chen was somewhat helpless, if it was just these two cars dealing with him, Yang Chen still had confidence that he could rely driving skills to find opportunities to overtake and get rid of them, but the moment Yang Chen caught a glimpse of the car blocking him from behind, Yang Chen could only give up, it turns out that is a fire-red Porsche 911!

This model has been in production for 40 years under Porsche, with so many years of reforms and renewals, the core design remains almost the same, one could only imagine the original design's level of quality.

Merely the comparison between the top speed his own BMW M3 and the top speed of that car is a difference of 70 to 80, and there is no way to go around this difference.

Just by seeing these cars, Yang Chen has understood a few things, these guys aren't a group of car robbers, people who could buy such cars, definitely wouldn't lack money. Seems like they are merely a few rich kids out for a spin, trying to make fun of his little sportscar.

Yang Chen once again lamented the world, for little kids go around looking for trouble instead of studying, and yet at the same time Yang Chen was also too lazy to deal with them, one less incident is better than one more, therefore, he slowed down his car, intending to let them go past.

However, things don't go as planned, without waiting for Yang Chen to slow down, the Porsche behind had already begun sounding off it's horn, the two cars in front then begins slowing down, sticking to his car unwilling to let him go!

Presently, according to the laws of ZhongHai, if the car behind knocks the car in front, it is by law that the car behind pays for all damages, thus with this scenario, if Yang Chen knocks the two cars in front he has to pay for both of them, but if the Porsche behind knocks the driver only needs to pay for one person's share. Therefore, he would make a loss from this trade!

Once he understood the thought process of these rich playboys, Yang Chen reveals a devilish smile, such a bad taste..... if it's about playing with cars, he

doesn't dare to call himself the best, but he is still top class. In the past he drove dozens of reputable cars on Germany's Nürburgring , and was even close to the best records for a majority of them.

After doing some calculations, Yang Chen firmly decided to give these guys a ruthless counter. As they say, eat one mistake and you'll grow one bit wiser, since their parents did not teach them well, then let this young uncle do it for them.

During that moment of thought, Yang Chen's hands had already started moving, clutch, brake, handbrake, and the steering wheel fiercely rotates! After a series of eye-blurring adjustments, the entire M3 in that moment drifts and turned a full 180 degrees!

“Chi chi chi.....”

The tyre and tarmac emitted a harsh grinding sound, with the white smoke being rather conspicuous in the night!

The red taillights flung a sharp and beautiful red line, when the M3 moved forward again, it was already moving backwards towards the Porsche 911, about to knock it!

The abrupt turn of events had the drivers of these cars bewildered, how did this fella do it!? Drifting!? Does he think he is Initial D's Fujiwara Takumi!?

However human instinct told the Porsche driver at the back, this fella actually wants to collide head to head with me, he wants to do a direct collision at over 100km/h!

Two whistling car shadows, like two violent bullets, are right about to collide a face to face!

At the time that this rapid 160km/h Porsche saw this scene, without any time to hesitate, the driver could only turn the steering wheel towards the roadside parking lots!

The thing that left these drivers incomparably frightened is, this BMW M3 actually didn't have the slightest intention to change directions! And it cut straight through the initial path!

If it wasn't for the Porsche promptly changing directions, then this would definitely have caused both parties to suffer severe injuries, and would have been an accident that totally wrecked both cars! What's more, out of the two of them one would have been squeezed into a patty!

Cold sweat poured out of all these car's owners, this fella is toying with life! Is he unafraid of death!?

The M6 and F430 in front both come to a stop, pulling over at the side, two youngsters in designer t-shirts got off, and blocked the road forward with unkind expressions.

Yang Chen slowly turned the car around, stopped the car at the side of the road, and walked towards the two guys. He knew that without making things clear they would not give way.

The Porsche's owner also got off the car, but what made Yang Chen surprised is it was actually a girl, however the way this girl dressed was abnormal, wearing a pink mushroom shaped wig, a white cartoon t-shirt, and a jean shorts full of holes. What made things worse was, the girl's earrings were two skulls, and both her bracelet and necklace were silver crosses.

In contrast was a smooth delicate face with clear brows and beautiful eyes, especially that pair of eyes that already showed a faint youthful and devilish charm. Only the body wasn't fully developed, still looking like green apples, she should be of high school age.

The girl's pair of rich-looking eyes stared straight at Yang Chen as he approached her, when face to face, she promptly extended a small hand which had a purple little butterfly tattoo on it, revealed two cute tiger teeth, she crisply laughed and said, "My name is TangTang, nice to meet you."

[TL: In mandarin its called tiger teeth but it just means maxillary canine/eye teeth, usually young teenagers have them? Her name, TangTang literally translates to SugarSugar or SweetSweet, quite cute, it's only her given name btw.]

Yang Chen looked at this girl, TangTang, a little surprised. He was initially expecting a big scene full of crying instead of a friendly handshake.

Without much hesitation, Yang Chen extends his hand and gently grips TangTang's hand, "My name is Yang Chen. not nice to meet you all."

§

Chapter 23: The Young Lady's Threat

TangTang was a little stunned by what Yang Chen said, but immediately followed up with a 'gege' sound of laughter, revealing a somewhat strange look, "Uncle, you're very humorous."

"I do not know whether I'm humorous or not, but I need to trouble you guys to open the road, I want to go home." With that said, Yang Chen glanced at the two men.

The two men just regained their senses from the dangerous situation earlier, hearing Yang Chen ask them to give way, one of the two, a boy with hair dyed yellow gives a cold hmph, laughs and says: "Give way? You just did such a dangerous thing to our big sis TangTang, without even lowering your head or an apology and yet you want to leave? The way you think is too simple!"

"Big sis TangTang, how about we make a call for help?" The other long-haired man recommended with a somewhat threatening tone.

TangTang pouts, "What nonsense are you spouting, did I say I want to do something to this uncle?"

"Then big sis TangTang you....." The two men were somewhat surprised.

TangTang sweetly smiled, faced Yang Chen and said: "Uncle, your driving skills earlier is so cool, just like those in the movies, can you teach me?" With that said, she reveals a youthful longing look exclusive to young ladies, that makes others instantly grow affection for her.

The two henchmen seems to never have thought TangTang would suddenly request for a driving coach, but thinking of Yang Chen's tail swinging moves, they too reveal a little longing. Despite the fact that they have good cars, they aren't able pull off such cool driving moves.

Yang Chen shook his head somewhat unhappily, "No way, it's too dangerous, you're all still young, be good go home and sleep, don't go racing late at night."

Hearing these words, TangTang's smiling face totally collapsed, she made a

hmpf sound and said : “Uncle, the reason I asked you to teach, is because your driving skills are not bad, it is me thinking highly of you. But don’t you think for a moment that the scene of you nearly killing me earlier is already forgotten.”

These words led Yang Chen to be unable to hold back from laughing, “Oh? How do you want to settle it?”

“Aren’t you great at driving? Don’t you wanna go home? Good, then I will call people here to wreck your car. Then see how you’re going to drive, and how you will go home!” TangTang proudly pulled her hand away, and the yellow-haired man at the back immediately followed the command, he happily drew out a brand new iPhone and made a call.

“Big bro Yuanye, big sis TangTang is being bullied, hurry and come!” The yellow-haired man shouted, and gave Yang Chen a mean smile, apparently judging Yang Chen to be finished.

Yang Chen pulled out a cigarette with slight interest, the night is long, and he also doesn’t mind disciplining these naughty rich kids.

“Uncle, right now this is your last chance to reconsider, are you going to obediently teach me? Or will you let you and your car receive a little punishment tonight?” TangTang’s pink wig lightly blows in the wind, the beautiful face is, at this moment, unlikeable just like a little devil.

As if hearing the least convincing words Yang Chen ignored her. Yang Chen has always been lazy to make unnecessary extra moves onto people, he slowly turned his head away, looking towards the several cars closing in rapidly.

In a flash, three sports cars stop in front of Yang Chen, the leading car is actually the new Audi R8, another magnificent car with a V8 engine, the black body showed the great texture lines of the car, in the dark night like a proud black knight.

Very quickly, coming out from the R8 was a handsome young man wearing a Versace shirt, sharp angular face, starry eyes with sword-like brows, upright posture, and a head full of short hair that gives the feeling of being energetic. He is approximately twenty years old, but seemed very mature.

The moment this young man named Yuanye stepped out of his car, four male

bodyguards in black suits stuck to his back, tightly protecting him.

Seeing this scene, Yang Chen's eyes gained some playfulness, in this generation those who drive supercars may not necessarily be extremely rich, there are things like payment by installments, but people able to hire bodyguards, within the entire ZhongHai are the few within few, they are either rich and powerful or an incomparably important person.

Yuanye only took one look at Yang Chen, and immediately averts his gaze, as if looking for one more second would be a waste.

"TangTang, what happened?" Yuanye reveals a warm smile to TangTang and asked.

TangTang pouts impatiently, as if she doesn't care about giving Yuanye face, she signalled to the other two behind her to speak.

The two henchmen are perhaps also considered rich family's young masters, but in the presence of this young man named Yuanye they turned extremely tame, they greeted "big bro Yuanye" and explained the dangerous scene to him.

Once Yuanye heard TangTang nearly got killed by Yang Chen's car, his eyebrows tightened together, from his initial gaze at Yang Chen of disdain, gradually changing into cold anger.

"Don't worry TangTang , I will settle this matter." Yuanye as before spoke to TangTang very warmly, but now made a "move" hand gesture to the four black clothed men.

The four bodyguards neatly nodded, then moved forward together, an imposing pressure instantly rises.

Yet Yang Chen laughed, seems like these bodyguards have went through military training, only soldiers have this type of aura, however this little bit of aura is still completely useless.

The four bodyguards initially intended to simply throw a few punches to satisfy the master's request, but who knew, even before getting 3 steps closer to Yang Chen, they felt a strong aura flooding out like a raging tsunami!

These guys who were all soldiers before had their backs starting to sweat. Their

nearly completely degenerated keen senses told them, this man is extremely dangerous! At an unprecedented level!!

Just like a tiny cyclone, directly slamming into the entire sea's cold waves, the feeling of being unable to fight back emits from their hearts.

Yuanye, upon seeing the four bodyguards stop is extremely unhappy, "What's going on? Settling one person is so hard? Do you need me to do it myself?"

The four bodyguards look at each other and sourly smiles, after taking someone's money to help protect them from misfortune, as a bodyguard servant, despite knowing that they are courting death, they still have to go!

At seemingly the same time, the four uniformly charges at Yang Chen, with violent fists and kicks thrown towards the left, right and lower body of Yang Chen at the same time!

Yang Chen blew a final breath of smoke, and tossed the cigarette butt with sparks into the air, his pair of legs lightly tapped the ground, and the body flowingly made a forward somersault, as he lands, he is already behind the four bodyguards, barely dodging the four people.

Immediately after, Yang Chen throws his hands towards the back, and accurately catches two bodyguard's back collar, the two bodyguard's bodies come to a halt, and they feel an irresistible force pulling on to them from behind. Involuntarily, the two bodyguards flew away!

Just like in a movie's special effects, Yang Chen's body makes use of the counter force of throwing the two bodyguards to fall backwards, at the same time, his two arms bend, and he directly elbows at the remaining two bodyguard's lumbar spines!

In the flash it took to execute these moves, the four bodyguards that were charging forward, have all been knocked down onto the ground, wailing in pain, unable to crawl back up.

The cigarette butt tossed into the air by Yang Chen, only now falls onto the asphalt road, and shoots out several tiny sparks.

Chapter 24: Delivering Food

Even Yuanye, who promised TangTang to deal with Yang Chen became tongue-tied and terrified. The two other men who witnessed Yang Chen's driving skills were also dumbstruck and cowering behind Yuanye, without the guts to take another look at him.

Only TangTang had a different look in her eyes, as if she noticed something exciting. The way she looked at Yang Chen totally changed in that moment.

Yang Chen claps his hands, somewhat unsatisfied and shook his head, then gave Yuanye a teasing smile, "Young master, do you still want to stand up for this little girl?"

Originally Yang Chen thought, when Yuanye witnesses his absolutely overwhelming presence, he would choose to back off and no longer stand up for TangTang, but Yuanye's behavior was instead beyond his expectations.

After a short little tremble, Yuanye continued to resolutely stand in front of TangTang, his tone was no longer as domineering as before, but still just as resolute as he said: "I admit your skills are very strong, but don't think I'll be afraid of you just because of that, I will definitely protect TangTang."

Apparently TangTang did not expect Yuanye to unswervingly stay and protect her, her eyes show that she was quite touched, but she doesn't speak any words of gratitude.

Yang Chen makes a weird smile and says: "Unexpectedly a dedicated emotional seedling, not bad not bad, pretty similar to me your uncle." Yang Chen who just took in a mistress laughs out loud, turns and walks towards his M3.

"You're just leaving like that!?" Yuanye stared blankly, then understands that Yang Chen has let him go.

Yang Chen returns to the BMW, and blinks at Yuanye, "You're Yuanye right? You might feel that some of the words I say is me acting old, and some of the words may sound cliché. On behalf of your character being pretty good, let me

tell you. Don't think too highly of yourself in the future, the phrase 'a man beyond a man and a sky beyond a sky' is not blindly made. I'm just advising you with no other intentions. However right now, you guys should no longer be stopping me from going home right?"

The two young men who were blocking the road have long been hiding in a corner, who would still dare to obstruct him? Yang Chen starts the car and quickly left the scene.

Watching the BMW gradually drive off into the distance, Yuanye and TangTang finally came to their senses, but were still unable to make heads or tails of what happened.

"Such a strange person." Yuanye has a little lingering fear, on his handsome face was both discontent and reverence.

Yet TangTang instead has a face of freshness, with a pair of beautiful pupils full of wittiness, no one could possibly know what crafty ideas were going about in her mind.

Returning to the villa at Dragon Garden, WangMa welcomed him the moment he entered, and with a warm smile said: "Young Master you're back, have you eaten? If you haven't, I'll heat up some dishes."

Yang Chen rubbed his stomach, considering the *piston exercise* with Rose in the afternoon, along with racing and pummeling people earlier, he totally forgot to eat. Yang Chen promptly laughed and asks WangMa to prepare a meal.

After gulping down two bowls of rice on the western dining table, Yang Chen finally burped in satisfaction, he faces the satisfied-looking WangMa and said: "The feeling of having someone who cooks at home is so great, especially someone who cooks as well as WangMa."

WangMa cleans up the table while happily saying, "It's good as long as Young Master likes it, compared to what Young Master had done, I could only cook and watch the house."

"What do you mean?" Yang Chen was a little confused.

Hesitating for a moment, WangMa face turned a little bitter, "Young Master, today when master came, if it wasn't for young master, Little Miss would most

likely be incredibly angry again today.”

Yang Chen understands in a flash, so it’s just about the father-daughter matter in the day between Lin Kun and Lin Ruoxi. Not knowing to laugh or to cry Yang Chen says, “From what I see Ruoxi is already pretty angry, being called by her own father a..... being called that, any daughter would get angry.”

WangMa shook her head, “Young Master has no idea, Little Miss may be angry, but this time cannot compare to the last two times. A few days ago, Master brought Little Miss to a marriage meeting with Xu family’s Young Master, he even used the old villa to threaten Little Miss, Little Miss was so angry that she ran out to drink. When she returned her whole body smelled like alcohol, the day before she didn’t even return home, and spent the night out. I’ve watched Little Miss grow up, our family’s Little Miss has always been very self-disciplined, if not for getting that angry, she definitely wouldn’t get drunk.

Yang Chen awkwardly rubbed his nose, *I* know right, drunk to the point of being oblivious that someone drugged her, and even letting *me* sleep with her like a bar hostess, if it wasn’t for *me* she wouldn’t even know who did it.

“Things are better now,” WangMa gratifyingly said: “With Young Master here, it will no longer be so easy for Master to bully Little Miss anymore, sure enough having a man in the house is the only way to live in peace.”

Yang Chen was embarrassed to continue listening, and changed the conversation topic by saying: “WangMa, where’s Ruoxi? Has she eaten?”

WangMa sourly smiled and said, “Little Miss is upstairs working in the study room, after being disturbed by the matter with Master in the day, only in the evening did calm down and have the mood to work, saying there’s not enough time left for work, she hasn’t even eaten dinner.”

“This isn’t the way, one cannot function on an empty stomach, even if pouring all effort into work she still has to eat right?” Yang Chen frowned.

“That’s what I think too, but Little Miss is stubborn, once she starts working she doesn’t even allow us to knock on the door, and also doesn’t allow us to bring things for her, otherwise she would get angry.” WangMa’s expression was both helpless and doting.

Yang Chen ponders for a moment. The future may be a mystery, but at least now she's still *my* wife, if she starves I won't feel good about it, therefore he says : "WangMa help me prepare another portion of food, I will send it to Ruoxi."

"Really? Perhaps if it is you, Young Master, sending it Little Miss would eat," as if WangMa had been hoping for Yang Chen to say that, she happily rushed to the kitchen.

Soon, Yang Chen carried a tray full of steaming dishes up to the door of Lin Ruoxi's study on the second floor. From the outside not a sound could be heard from beyond this scarlet door.

Yang Chen raised his hand to knock the door, but there's no reaction. Under the basis of his extraordinary hearing, it was so silent that Yang Chen felt it was strange.

With a little confusion, Yang Chen pulled open the door to the study himself, and quietly entered.

In the room, a vast array for books greet him, being placed neatly in all directions of this spacious room, a mixed smell of paper and Lin Ruoxi's body fragrance filled the room. Between two artistic pots of bamboo was a big mahogany office table, atop of it was filled with various kinds of documents and books.

The Lin Ruoxi of this moment, was surprisingly sitting on a black leather chair, leaning on the office table asleep.

With a peerlessly pretty sleeping face that was missing its usual coldness, her curvy slender eyebrows, delicate little jade nose, tender-slim red lips, every single part was an attraction. The bright table lamp refracts the head full of wavy black hair's attractive luster.

Suddenly witnessing his wife's soft and weak side, Yang Chen feels a little regretful, as a woman, she's under so much pressure and yet she's still has to desperately work. It is no wonder her smile has never been revealed despite being this beautiful. Thinking that, Yang Chen is unable to avoid feeling pity.

With the meal placed on the table, Yang Chen observed the study. He walks to a clothes hanger and takes a coat off, slowly walks back, then covers Lin Ruoxi's

body with it. He gently places the coat over her, fearing that she will wake up from the noise. Done with the coat, Yang Chen turns off the table lamp, bringing the room to complete darkness and leaves the room silently.

Downstairs, WangMa was already busy in the kitchen, seeing that it is still early, Yang Chen turns on the huge LED TV in the living room, lies on the big comfy sofa and watches the evening news.

Not long since, a ‘Da Da Da’ sound of footsteps comes from the staircase, Yang Chen turns, and sees his wife Lin Ruoxi already downstairs. In her hands is the coat he put on her, and she looks at him with a complicated expression.

Chapter 25: Taking A Job

“Why?” After a long period of silence, with a poker face, Lin Ruoxi finally spouts out this word.

“Why what?” Yang Chen asks back.

Lin Ruoxi threw the coat in her hand at Yang Chen, she wanted to ask why he suddenly decided to care and put a coat on her, and send her that meal, but when the words reached her throat she felt a little too embarrassed to say it, and could only say: “Why didn’t you wake me up.”

“What are you talking about? I have no idea.” Yang Chen pretends with an innocent face.

Lin Ruoxi creases her eyebrows, in her heart murmuring how this man is still such a rogue, “Don’t you know I’m in a hurry? Since you saw me sleeping you should have woke me up, what if it delays my work!”

“I’ve already said that I have no idea what you are talking about.” Yang Chen pulled out a cigarette, and minded his own business lighting it up, he intended to take it to the grave.

Helpless, Lin Ruoxi didn’t speak more about it, and only coldly said, “Without my permission you’re not allowed to enter my study and bedroom, otherwise I will have you move out.”

“Haha.....” Yang Chen laughs, “Move out? I’ve never said I want to move in, it is you who made me move in, why does it sound like I’m the one who begged you to let me move in? Hey, my dear wife, these words of yours are pretty baffling.”

“You.....” Lin Ruoxi wanted to protest, but remembered that it was indeed her that had him move in, she even prepared a room and bought essential items needed for daily use for him. With nothing better to say, she could only angrily glare at Yang Chen, “I’m not going to ramble on and on with a rogue like you, remember to go find a good job from tomorrow onwards!” With that said, leaving a wave of fragrance she once again goes upstairs.

Halfway up the stairs, she heard Yang Chen warmly say from the living room: “Remember to take your meals.”

Lin Ruoxi’s footsteps paused, a mysterious warmth flowed into her heart, she turns her head and stares at the back of the man smoking and watching TV, a little spellbound..... All these years, other than Wang Ma who raised her, and her long passed mother and granny, there truly had not been anybody else who had given her this type of family warmth, considerate care, and even more so a man. This feeling was very unfamiliar to Lin Ruoxi.

Once again, recalling how Yang Chen protected her during the day and how he threw that insufferable father Lin Kun out of the house to vent his anger for her, she couldn’t help feeling a little bashful about it.

Fact is, when Yang Chen covered her with the coat earlier, Lin Ruoxi was already awake. But with her innately cold character she did not know how to express her feelings, and also did not dare to open her eyes to face that scene, which was why she could only continue pretending to be sleeping.

Now hearing Yang Chen remind her to eat, she felt a little touched but her face remains as cold as ever, and returns with a line, “I don’t need your care”, then quickly returned to her study.

When Wang Ma who just left the kitchen witnessed this scene, she couldn’t help but to reveal a contented smile.

Located at the central business district of ZhongHai, Yu Lei International headquarters was a building over forty stories tall, the word “International” was not just boasting either, considering the fact that it has blossomed in three markets namely Europe, USA and Japan. Yu Lei International has even become one of China’s top 10 companies in fashion and cosmetics.

The entire Yu Lei building was just like a slender and elegant silver tulip, its smooth lines and simple yet elegant decor makes those who enter the building feel more lively and invigorated.

The air was filled with the faint smell of perfume, and all kinds of flowers and plants are attractively placed all around the building, bringing the beauty of nature to the plain white-toned decorations of the building.

However, what makes Yu Lei International Headquarters famous isn't its unique style of decor, but the many kinds of beautiful employees wearing OL (Office Lady) uniforms instead.

As they are a part of the fashion and cosmetics industry, it was as expected that females are the absolute majority. But what takes the cake was this, as Yu Lei International recruitment obviously takes corporate image into account, all of the employees who enter the company, are intelligent and beautiful city girls, even the worst are delicate and pleasant ladies. As for the company's or their partnered models, they can induce millions to daydream .

As a result, there are many lonely city men walking in circles outside of Yu Lei International, every single one of them hoping to hook onto one of the women inside. The only problem is, those who succeed are next to nothing.

[TL: This is the saddest story T.T]

With such an environment, to enter Yu Lei International has become the optimal choice for countless men. One can imagine, from the moment Yu Lei International released its advert of the Public Relations department recruiting, the number of men that wreck their heads trying to apply!

Therefore, for Yu Lei International's recruitment, they have come up with a few special requirements only applicable to men:

Number one, male applicants must possess a university bachelor's degree or higher from the top 50 universities in the world.

Number two, male applicants must be proficient in at least two foreign languages.

With such conditions, the men who wanted to take advantage of this opportunity for their personal desires were all scared silly. If there's a man who fulfills these conditions, why would he even go to Yu Lei International to be a public relations officer!? Even if they aren't top level executives they would be the elites of any company. Beauties may be important, but if one's rich would they still be lacking beauties?!

In the end, on the day Yu Lei International was conducting its final interview, among the dozens who came for the final interview, the only men remaining

numbered less than ten. And among these men, every single one of them were wearing branded goods all over, with arrogant expressions of being unparalleled in the world. They were obviously not taking this job seriously, believing in their hearts “I’m the best in the world”. They are such pampered sons, their aim, and also the reason of their job application, was merely to look for thrill and women because they were bored.

Right now there’s still five minutes before the start of the final two tests. The first was a written paper, and second was answering the examiner’s questions. Of the final thirty-over people remaining in the hall, a majority of the ladies seemed nervous, while the remaining seven or eight men were relaxed and carefree.

Standing in the wide fan-shaped hall, on Yang Chen’s side sat a fat man with an oily head and coquettish face, narrow spectacles, fully clothed in Armani branded goods.

“Hey, brother, which flower have you taken a fancy to?” The fatty got closer and said with a wretched smile.

Yang Chen uncertainly asks: “What do you mean taken fancy to which flower?”

“Still pretending!” Fatty mischievously smiled and said: “Brother, you don’t need to act so cold and reserved, at worst I can go first, I’ve taken fancy to the Public Relations department’s chief Mo Qianni. Alright, your turn!”

Yang Chen was speechless to the fatty’s honesty, and said: “I’m just here for the job, I already have a wife.”

“Fuck you! Who believes such a fake story!” Fatty gave Yang Chen a look of incomparable contempt, “Honest people don’t speak lies, which of the other brothers sitting here aren’t here because they have money yet have nowhere to spend it and so have come to find women? You are wearing this summer’s CK’s (Calvin Klein) newest fashion to apply for a small PR job, do you think I’m the fool or you’re the fool? And even a wife.....If you said you have ten lovers I would believe, but who has nothing better to do than marry a wife to manage oneself?”

Yang Chen was astonished, he quietly shook his head, sighed and said: “How is it that this country is even more open than overseas, has the world changed so fast? Could it be that I’ve become a good man of this generation?” and he no

longer paid attention to the fatty's groundless torment.

Right at this moment, the hall's doors were pushed open, a lady in a fitting black dress, snow-white shirt, and hair rolled into a bun slowly walked in, behind her followed four beautiful OL carrying materials.

“She's here, she's here! So Mo Qianni is personally supervising the test.....” The fatty beside him starts acting like he took some Ecstasy, he was excited to the point that he started shifting his butt on the seat, his two wolf-like eyes stares hard at the lady in uniform named Mo Qianni. It is not just fatty whose mood got excited, even the other men also reveal earnest gazes, they too obviously viewed this tender flower as their prey!

§

Chapter 26: I Am Used To Never Looking Back

Yang Chen raised his head to look, at this moment the enchanting figure of Mo Qianni has already arrived in front of the candidates, and she raised the small microphone.

With only a rough glance, Yang Chen already understood why Fatty and the other men were so infatuated in Mo Qianni.

This was indeed a pretty woman, with a fit body and cutesy face. If one had to compare, in Yang Chen's opinion she could compete with Rose. However, Rose has a more wild and flirtatious vibe, while Mo Qianni here, has a more confident and intellectual beauty vibe.

Obviously, to these men who have played enough with plain and ordinary girls, this sort of white-collared female leader was exceptionally difficult to resist.

"Everybody, please remain silent." Mo Qianni spoke formally with a smile, and with a voice as clear as a bell, "What we have next is a written exam regarding you candidates' foreign language capabilities. This is because PR work requires facing many types of customers.

With regards to us Yu Lei International, international customers are extremely common. In the future if one is unable to properly communicate on the job for the benefit of the company, that would be considered extremely irresponsible behavior. As according to everybody's declared information, we have prepared test papers on six foreign languages namely English, French, German, Japanese, Spanish and Italian.

Later on, everybody can choose according to their two preferred foreign languages for the test, applicants with a test score of 60% and above will enter the final interview. Therefore, everybody please seriously and carefully fill in the test papers we're about to give out. The time limit is one hour, thank you."

With that said, Mo Qianni signaled to the few other beautiful assistants by her side, the four assistants then spread out towards the four corners at the same time and started to give out the test papers from the corners towards the

middle.

The majority of those present who understood foreign languages had definitely started to learn since childhood. When learning they acquired English, and a language with similarities to English such as Spanish or the simpler Japanese. Which was why once it was time to choose test papers, English and Spanish test papers were chosen the most.

Yang Chen sat at a rather central position, when an assistant asked which test paper he wanted, Yang Chen felt distressed by the choices, in the end he awkwardly smiled and said: “Whichever, giving me any two will do.”

The beautiful assistant was seemingly stunned, *this man is either a fool or is truly formidable, is it possible he knows six foreign languages!?*

However she naturally wouldn't say anything unnecessary, with a mischievous heart, she also wanted to deliberately make things difficult for this man who thought too highly of himself, the assistant pulled out from the bottom the German and Italian test papers, no one else has chosen these two languages before this!

This examination may only require 60% of the total marks, but the lower the passing mark required, the higher the difficulty of the test.

Yang Chen didn't mind at all, upon receiving the test paper he writes his name, and began filling the blanks.

The atmosphere of the examination room turned heavy in five minutes, most importantly, few of the scarcely remaining male candidates were considerably unhappy. The reason is the contents of the test paper. In the test paper, majority of the questions were regarding ladies cosmetics and ladies clothing. This type of specific knowledge was something they probably can't answer even if it was in Chinese— they know how to play with women, but they don't understand women!

The men were going mad from being bombarded by specific cosmetic ingredients vocabulary, breast pads, bras, and thong professional designing vocabulary!

In less than 10 minutes, 4 out of the 7 or 8 remaining men dropped their pens

and left. Before leaving, they still greedily glanced at Mo Qianni's fiery figure, and unwillingly left the examination room.

Fatty who sat beside Yang Chen was sweating profusely with a painful headache, but he continued to endure and battle bravely.

When 15 minutes passed, Yang Chen creases his eyebrows while staring at the test paper, he raises his hand and says: "Excuse me.....proctor, I have a question."

Mo Qianni maintained her formal business smile, nods at Yang Chen and leisurely walks to him, "What questions do you have Mister?"

Mo Qianni's career womanly charm was substantially increased when she entered close proximity, the faint smell of the Chanel perfume on her body matched well with her intellectual temperament and exquisite face, she's a beauty radiating brilliance.

Fatty at the side had let go of his pen long ago, he stares infatuated at Mo Qianni while swallowing his saliva.

Perhaps it is because there are too many beauties by his side, at this time there is Rose, Li JingJing, and more importantly his wife Lin Ruoxi who is one grade higher than Mo Qianni, Yang Chen doesn't fervently gaze at Mo Qianni, and points at his German test paper saying: "About the question regarding "Vereiturn", I think that when you guys were setting the test, you mistyped the word Vereitern. In fact, when it comes to T-back easily causing ulcers on a lady's vagina, it is good enough if you use the suffix "eitern". It's simpler and more precise."

*(TL: This stuff is a little too high level for me, sorry if it doesn't make sense to you. Does anyone who understands German know what's goin on?) (Reader **Dummkopf** has a rather convincing explanation in the comments)*

Yang Chen did not intentionally lower his voice, although he spoke faintly and indifferently. When he finished, the surrounding people all displayed amazed expressions as they gazed at him. A few ladies in the group even started blushing. It was strange to hear a man talk about women's private parts in a public setting.

Mo Qianni was stunned, she never expected that the question Yang Chen had was not a personal question, and was instead a problem with the test paper, after glancing at Yang Chen with a peculiar look, she signals her assistant to immediately go online to check.

In just a short moment, after searching through the German dictionary, the assistant informs Mo Qianni that the word “ulcer” is a mistake, and likely caused by carelessness.

With this, the surrounding people’s impression of Yang Chen immediately changed. From suspicion and surprise into admiration and jealousy, several of the Yu Lei International’s lady employees began whispering amongst themselves, staring at Yang Chen with interest.

When Fatty saw this scene, he couldn’t help but cry out in his heart: Damn! To think he is pretending to be a pig to eat a tiger, a true expert in the art of picking up girls!

Mo Qianni pursed her lips and smiles, “Mister you are truly a genuine talent, thank you for pointing out our negligence, please continue with the test.”

“Continue?” Yang Chen chuckled as he picked up the two tests, “Proctor, I’ve already finished, I wish to turn them in”.

“Waa.....”

Noise erupts from all 4 corners of the room , at this moment, everybody in the examination hall was shocked.

Is he still human!? Only 15 minutes have passed, not only did he spot a high level mistake, he has even finished both papers and is now submitting them!?

Mo Qianni’s unperturbed expression finally had a change, and revealed a slightly cute expression of surprise, “Mister, are you sure you want to hand in your test papers? There is still more than 40 minutes remaining, don’t you want to check?”

“I am used to never looking back, there is no need to go over it.” said Yang Chen as he shakes his head to decline her well-intentioned advice.

“Alright, we will grade the test paper on the spot.”

Mo Qianni did not continue with any superfluous words as she took the exam papers and passed it to the assistant, then continued to look over other applicants. However, time after time, Mo Qianni would give Yang Chen a glance, unable to fully suppress her curiosity.

While feeling bored, Yang Chen wanted to take a smoke but suddenly remembered that it was prohibited, so he raised his hand and asked, "Proctor, I want to go to the bathroom and take a smoke while I'm at it."

"Puchi...." Several ladies couldn't endure from laughing out loud, they did not expect that this handsome young man who seemed well-educated would speak such "vulgar" words, but such a character was refreshing to them. After all, majority of the men that appear in front of these white-collared ladies are all pretending to be perfect men. In comparison with Yang Chen's undisciplined manners, calling it a difference between heaven and earth isn't an exaggeration.

Mo Qianni, not fully understanding the thoughts of an eccentric person like Yang Chen, knitted her brows as she nodded her head, "Alright, however, rather than going to the bathroom to smoke, I would prefer you do it out of the building. Also, come back on time".

Without waiting for Mo Qianni to finish speaking, Yang Chen had already ran out of the room, and even forgot to close the door!

Chapter 27: Bohemia

Outside the Yu Lei building, Yang Chen was taking a smoke when he noticed a group of crestfallen people, including the wretched Fatty, walk out of the building in succession.

Upon seeing Yang Chen, Fatty's face displayed a look of anger. "I must say, brother, how is that brain of yours grown? How can you answer such difficult topics? I could only understand 80% of the English test and don't even mention to me about the French test!"

"Hehe, it's all luck, luck." Yang Chen responded. He couldn't tell Fatty that because of the strange martial arts he practiced, he could learn something just from seeing it once. Yang Chen could successfully utilize a language after memorizing a dictionary of its language.

Dejected, Fatty says: "Forget about it, only someone with a brain as abnormal as yours can enter Yu Lei International. The rest of our brothers have all failed, you must uphold the image of us men, as the final torchbearer!"

(ED: gasps)

"What! Are there no other men remaining from this round?" Yang Chen asked.

"Who in the right mind would spend the whole day doing nothing but researching the purpose of underwear designs, and in French and Spanish vocabulary?" Shaking his fat head, "The way I see it, including you, there won't be more than 5 people remaining!"

Yang Chen rubbed his head in distress, to be honest, this exam didn't feel as hard as how Fatty described it to be, but Yang Chen felt that he exposed too much, he should have intentionally answered a few questions wrong. If he got too good of a result, wouldn't that be too conspicuous and contrary to Yang Chen's original goal of finding a laidback job?"

Fatty, letting out a long sigh, patted Yang Chen's shoulder and said, "Alright, I'm going to drink with some of the other brothers who dropped out, otherwise

the pain in our hearts cannot be quelled!”

After talking, a group of people all wearing the same expression of regret walked to the parking lot.

With some worries, Yang Chen slowly walked back to the examination hall. Inside the hall, there were only 3 beautiful women left, and if you counted Yang Chen, there were only 4 people who passed the exam!

Upon entering inside, Mo Qianni and the other examiners all looked at Yang Chen strangely, as if he was a freak.

As Mo Qianni had seen it all, after pausing for only a brief moment, a smile appeared on her face as she said, “Congratulations, Mr. Yang, you are the sole remaining male applicant to proceed to our final interview. You are also the applicant who scored the highest on the foreign language test, getting the max score.”

While paying attention to how respectful Mo Qianni was when she spoke to him, Yang Chen was certain that he had showed off too much. His skill in German and Italian caused all these ladies to be thoroughly amazed.

Awkwardly chuckling, he sat back down and waited for the final interview.

As there were only 4 applicants remaining, Mo Qianni no longer required a microphone and spoke with a smile, “The 4 of you were capable enough to pass our difficult foreign language test, it seems that all of you do have genuine talent. For the final round, we will be testing your understanding of the fashion industry and your ability to appreciate fine goods.

As everybody knows, every year, our Yu Lei International’s clothing design changes. And so it is considered a rather difficult task for new employees to identify which clothing belongs to our brand.

In a while, there will be 10 models wearing this year’s new clothing designs shown to the 4 of you. In 5 minutes or less, the 4 of you must pick the outfit that isn’t our company’s design. There is only one chance, and if you get it right, you’ll be granted a 2 month trial contract no questions asked.”

Yang Chen wrinkled his brows, in all honesty, his understanding towards fashion could be considered nonexistent as he does not care about what he

wear. In the past his clothes were all custom-made and he never came in contact with clothing belonging to any brand.

At the same time, in the exam room, a curtain was being pulled open revealing 10 tall models leisurely walking forward. The spotlights shone at them as they stood in front of the 4 candidates.

At that moment, the eyes of all 3 women displayed admiration and released a gasp of surprise. Women, innately love all things beautiful, when looking at the 10 outfits in front of them, they all had different thoughts coming in and out of their mind as they started to examine each and every outfit carefully.

Only after repeatedly examining their boobs, did Yang Chen smack his lips together and start focusing on the outfits.

Each and every one of these outfits had different sorts of patterns and styles. There were leopard print dresses, lacy one-piece dresses, Tutus made of chiffon, and pink long dresses with straps. There were even elegant business suits for women. The only thing they shared in common was that none of them had any traces of a brand.

When Yang Chen saw the 10 models, he first stared blankly for a while. Right after, Yang Chen began writing his answer on the given paper without any hesitation.

When 5 minutes passed, Mo Qianni clapped her hands and an assistant walked up to collect their answer sheets. After finishing, the assistant handed the papers to her.

Giving them a brief glance, Mo Qianni displayed a flash of surprise and looked at Yang Chen with curious eyes. Pursing her lips and smiling, “The results have already been decided, I am representing the entire Yu Lei International to warmly welcome our new colleague, Mr. Yang Chen.

After finishing, she took the lead to clap for him. The other employees, after hearing the announcement, all looked at him with curious eyes and started to happily clap to welcome him.

However, the other 3 applicants found this hard to swallow. Their evaluating skills lost to a man who speaks so vulgarly?. One of the three was displeased and

inquired, “Proctor, can you tell us the correct answer?”

After Mo Qianni quieted the people around, smiled toward that female applicant, looked at Yang Chen and asked, “Mr. Yang, please tell us how you arrived at the correct answer”.

Although Yang Chen didn’t care about how people viewed him, he knows it isn’t good to not give face to his future superior in front of this many people, Yang Chen sighed and raised his hand, pointing to the 10th model and said “I chose her.”

It was evident that the other 3 applicants blanked out for a moment, but afterwards, they started to look at the 10th model again.

This model was wearing a classic European Bohemian styled long dress, because Bohemian ladies clothing seemed complex and difficult to grasp. Various tassels and pendants required careful matching, moreover this type of ancient wandering gypsy freedom, along with the clothing’s mysterious air was not something modern ladies can control, and so this type of dress was not well liked.

But because of that being too obvious, the three lady candidates only took a short glance at number 10 before ruling it out. They did not believe, that after giving them such a difficult foreign language exam, such a big loophole would appear, after all this Bohemian dress was too gaudy! They kept thinking that it is a trap!

Yang Chen does not care about the 3 ladies’ shock and regrets, he unenthusiastically explains: “If I’m right, the Bohemian dress Model number 10 is wearing, was handmade by an old-fashioned Italian designer. The crystals on this dress’ girdle and pendants on the fringed skirt are all real and elaborately polished crystals. The diamond pieces on the chest are also real South African diamonds. In my opinion, although Yu Lei International is one of the top 10 fashion brands in the country, they can’t possibly be using this many high-class natural crystals and diamonds just to make this dress right?”

This time, not just the three candidates, even all the other Yu Lei International’s employees revealed an expression of disbelief, they originally thought Yang Chen could only tell that this dress isn’t cheap, but did not expect,

Yang Chen could even recognize the origins of this dress clearly!

What everyone present doesn't know is, Yang Chen was extremely happy inside. The designer of this dress was the old fella who used to make custom-made dress shirts for him.

I wore the clothes for so many years, how can I not recognize this style, this level of extravagance, is by whom? Nobody else in this world can compare with me in understanding this guy's style!

Looking at the grand and refined Bohemian dress, Yang Chen revealed a wistful expression. He softly spoke in his heart, "Ron, you stubborn old man who refuses to wear reading glasses despite suffering from presbyopia, are you living well?"

§

Chapter 28: I Am Proud Of Selling Mutton Skewers

Due to Yang Chen's performance at the examination, the attention of all Yu Lei International Headquarters employees were on him. Even women that he was going to work with looked at such an intelligent man as a popular discussion topic over tea time. Even before officially starting work, he has already been recognized by a vast majority of people.

After signing the contract, Yang Chen was led by Mo Qianni over to the PR Department located on the 18th floor of the Yu Lei building. This whole floor belongs to the PR Department.

Entering the workplace, Yang Chen found a group of people standing up and clapping for him. Since the absolute majority of the people there were women, when a man is capable enough of joining, the women all become excited.

After having Yang Chen make a simple self-introduction, Mo Qianni has him enter her department head's office.

In the office, other than a few pots of carefully placed Scarlet Kaffir Lilies, the rest of the room was extremely simple. The desk was neat and tidy, while on the wall there were several plaques, declaring the owner of this room as someone who has great accomplishments and efficiency in her style of work.

Towards his new superior, Yang Chen did feel admiration. This woman may appear beautiful and seductive, but she is even more confident and witty. One cannot feel any inkling of wrongdoing from her, it can be seen from the fact that she got to such a position at such a young age and all of that is not possible just by being beautiful.

"Please take a seat, would you like a drink?" Mo Qianni politely smiled and asked.

"No thanks, I'm not thirsty." Yang Chen responded.

Mo Qianni laughs at him while shaking her head, and continued with pouring a cup of water for him. "The reason I asked you what you want to drink is not to

help you relieve your thirst, it is a hint to you that I want to have a long talk with you. By saying you're not thirsty, aren't you rejecting a lengthy talk with me? From here on out, you are a member of our PR department, don't miss simple hints such as this."

Yang Chen feels a little conflicted, he only just entered the company and was already receiving a show of superiority, he helplessly says: "Erm..... Miss Mo, I'm a boorish person, being an errand boy is fine by me, but this type of business is not something I'm adept with."

"I don't believe that a man who is fluent in Italian, German and is able accurately identify the workmanship of an Italian-made handmade designer clothing with a glance can possibly be considered a boorish person." Mo Qianni bright and pretty eyes stared straight at Yang Chen, leaning against the table, she looked slim and graceful.

"This....." Yang Chen had no counters to Mo Qianni's sharp words, and could only raise his hands, "Miss Mo, believe it or not, I'm only here to look for a job, in fact I'm not even sure what work is done in the PR department. But of course, since I have signed the contract, I will give it my best, I just want to lay down the truth first."

Seeing that Yang Chen didn't seem to be lying, Mo Qianni changed topics: "I have just looked over your resume, the information you provided is very limited, there is only a Harvard University Market Management Master's Degree. However among all the applicants, you are the only one that possesses a Master's Degree from an American Ivy League school, which was why you were the sole exception that was directly entered into the final examination list. Right now it seems we didn't make a mistake, since at least in terms of foreign languages and fashion you seem to possess exceptional attainments."

"All thanks to luck, luck....." Hearing the lady superior in front bombard him with such praises, Yang Chen who wouldn't even frown if countless number of guns were shooting at him suddenly felt somewhat guilty.

Mo Qianni felt unsatisfied with Yang Chen's unrefined excuses, she returned to her seat and after maintaining her silence for a while, she asked: "Yang Chen, since you say you don't understand anything about PR, why did you apply?"

“You want the truth?”

“Why would I possibly want to hear a lie?”

“I think you might prefer to hear a lie, the truth might be too much for you to handle.” Yang Chen said while feeling somewhat embarrassed.

“The truth, I want to hear the truth.” Mo Qianni was getting pretty angry, this new employee seems to have zero respect for his superior.

Yang Chen took a deep breath, “Alright then, the main reason I came to apply, is because my wife wants me to find a dignified office job.”

“Your wife wants you to find a dignified job?” Mo Qianni feels that she’s about to faint, creases her eyebrows and asks: “What was your former job?”

“Erm..... I’m a mutton skewer seller, right at the west region’s market, perhaps you’ve seen me there before, I’ve set up stall for half a year now.” Yang Chen straightforwardly said with a smile.

Mo Qianni felt she was going mad, mutton skewer seller!? The only qualified member pedantically chosen from a huge pile of elites is a mutton skewer seller!?

“I don’t find this joke funny, Yang Chen, I hope you stop mocking me as that is merely mocking yourself.” Mo Qianni tried her best to calmly speak.

When Yang Chen heard this, he felt puzzled, how was this mockery? And so he made a serious face and said: “Miss Mo, you may look down on my job, but you can’t look down on my character. I may only be a mere mutton skewer seller, but I have no reason to joke about my employment. *I am proud of selling mutton skewers!*”

Mo Qianni’s pretty face turns pale as she gnashed her teeth and says: “You still say you aren’t mocking me!? A man who is a Harvard graduate, extremely fluent in at least two foreign languages and able to accurately identify a handmade Italian product’s origin, is a mutton skewer seller!? Then what about the other applicants, and all the other people in society, what are they? Are all of them veggie sellers!?”

Unexpectedly, after this outburst of anger, Yang Chen makes a look of serious

thought, lowers his head for a moment, and replies: “Miss Mo, I’m not sure if they have sold vegetables before, but you could ask them.”

“You..... you.....” Mo Qianni felt the sky spin and earth twist. *How was this brute’s brain grown? Is he really a human being from earth!?*

Seeing his new superior’s face bubbling up with anger and ample chest repeatedly undulate, Yang Chen is aware that he has gotten into trouble, as even before he formally started work he has made his superior this angry. But Yang Chen truly doesn’t know what to do, he wanted to lie but she refuses to hear it, he spoke the truth and she gets angry, what is he to do? Therefore he could only brace himself and stay silent.

Mo Qianni is considered a hero amongst women, she may have burst with anger, but she also managed to calm her emotions quickly. However, the way she looked at Yang Chen was no longer as kind as before, seemingly looking at Yang Chen as if he is a playboy here to look for her and make himself happy. Once she thought of things this way, Mo Qianni made a cold smile and said: “Alright, I’m not going to speak much more with you, your desk is outside at the back of the third column, it’s already cleaned up. There will be someone who hands you work. You may leave.”

“Oh, thank you Miss Mo, I shall take my leave now.” Yang Chen said as though a burden had been taken off of his chest. Just as he stood up, he suddenly remembered something as he turned his body around, picked up the cup of water, and downed it in a single gulp. Upon doing so, he used his sleeve to wipe his mouth, and left her office.

Upon seeing this, Mo Qianni’s eyebrows once again furrowed. She felt that she did not want to pay another glance at Yang Chen, but he had already signed the contract. If she wanted to fire him early, the company would have to pay quite a steep penalty. Actions such as this must attain the approval of the CEO, or it could not be done. After all, even though this is only a trial period, he is now a member of the headquarters, and not under the jurisdiction of a department’s management.

After thinking it over, Mo Qianni still decided to make a phone call....

“Hello.” The lady on the other side of the line gently said.

Mo Qianni hesitated for a moment, then said: “CEO, I would like to dismiss the new male trial PR member, he has some serious attitude problems, integrity problems and capability problems, there are many specific reasons, I wish to receive your approval.”

The lady addressed as CEO remained silent for a while, then replied: “You have always been cautious with your work, since you have signed the contract, why are you immediately regretting? Send me all of his data, I will make my decision after taking a look.”

“Yes, CEO.” After Mo Qianni hung up the phone, she helplessly sighed, then opened up the data storage, and via the company’s intranet, she sent Yang Chen’s information directly to the CEO’s office.

Chapter 29: The Chirpy PR Department

Yang Chen greeted his passionate new colleagues while slowly walking towards his seat, the moment he sat down, he was once again surrounded by several ladies with outstanding looks, each of them with radiant eyes staring at him.

“Hey handsome, let me introduce myself, my name is Zhao Hongyan.” This was a lady with big wavy curves in a beige suit and red phoenix eyes(eyes with corners that incline upwards) that werere exceptionally charming, at this moment she warmly stretched out her white hand, and introduced herself.

“Big sis Hongyan, our new colleague just arrived and you’re already stretching your hand, aren’t you afraid of scaring him?” Another lady wearing a baby blue outfit made a ‘gege’ laughing sound, her face was a little round, and she has quite a plump body, she laughed and said: “Your name is Yang Chen right? From here on in our PR department, you have to be most careful of big sis Hongyan here, when she eats up men she doesn’t even leave the bones!”

Zhao Hongyan doesn’t blush, makes a ‘hmp’ sound, and stretches her hand to pinch the plump lady’s outstanding bottom, “Save it Zhang Cai, who doesn’t know that your demands are the highest? You’re unable to even sleep without a man at night.”

“Hmph, that’s not the case, big sis Hongyan look, our big sis Mingyu hasn’t gotten married yet. No matter what we can’t snatch him from her!”

Following Zhang Cai’s gaze, Yang Chen looked towards a quiet lady, this was a tall lady in a pink outfit, with shoulder length hair that was dyed with several streaks of purple and beautiful facial features that revealed a distinctive office lady style.

Liu Mingyu sweetly smiles and says, “What are you guys staring at, I’m just welcoming our new colleague, and am not as vile as you guys make me out to be.” With that said, Liu Mingyu extends her arm and says: “Little brother Yang Chen, you wouldn’t mind a handshake right?”

“Oh, of course.” Yang Chen naturally wouldn’t mind having close contact with

a beauty like that, it would be even better if he could pinch her butt like Zhao Hongyan did to Zhang Cai though.

The moment he came into contact with Liu Mingyu's slender hand, Yang Chen felt Liu Mingyu's playful pinky gently rubbing on his palm. As he raised his head, Liu Mingyu as expected gave him a saucy wink.

Just this simple and dubious action made Yang Chen feel like he was on cloud nine. *No wonder so many men struggled so hard to enter Yu Lei International, the average quality of the ladies here is so high, and even more importantly they are extremely "friendly"!*

Following the welcome from the three ladies, numerous ladies from the office also welcomed Yang Chen, of course without missing out and adding in some dirty jokes.

Only after 10 minutes did Yang Chen spot another man in the office. This was a considerably short male with fair skin wearing a white shirt, he looked like a college student that had yet to complete puberty, and had a delicate face with a shy expression.

Noticing his only male comrade not coming over to greet him and instead having a consistently shy look, Yang Chen finds that funny, how is it possible that a man is less outgoing than this bunch of ladies? So, Yang Chen took the initiative to extend his hand and said: "I'm Yang Chen, seems like you are the only other guy in this office, let's get along well in the future."

The pretty boy immediately shook Yang Chen's hand and was a little red in the face, he lowered his head and said: "Erm.....Erm..... I'm Chen Bo, welcome to our department."

Chen Bo? Morning Erection? What a name to choose, but that aspect of his don't seem to be able to get erect at all!

(TL: The name Chen Bo sounds the same as morning erection in chinese, morning erection pfft)(ED: Hahaha, I'm dying too.)

Yang Chen couldn't help but laugh and say: "This name of yours, it's pretty meaningful, very manly."

Once Chen Bo heard that, he shyly lowered his head even more and softly said:

“Thank you.”

That’s right, he’s shy, a man named “Morning Erection” is as delicate and shy as a girl!

The surrounding ladies came over, and the plump lady name Zhang Cai ‘gege’ laughed and said : “Yang Chen you may not know this, Little Bo here is a scholar from North University, before you came, he was the only male in our department.”

“Things are better now, with big bro Yang here, the balance of Yin and Yang in our office has returned a little.” A younger female PR member has already started calling Yang Chen “big bro”.

Yang Chen joked along with the other ladies for a while and did not hold-up much time in the office, he returned to his desk and started tidying up the various documents and office tools.

The closest desk to Yang Chen’s belonged to the first who shook hands with him, Zhao Hongyan. Zhao Hongyan happily asked: “Handsome do you need any help? If there’s anything you don’t understand just ask me.”

Yang Chen thought for a minute, and asked: “Even little Bo who is this shy can join PR? Doesn’t a PR have to interact and make business deals while receiving customers? Is he really that outspoken?”

Zhao Hongyan stared blankly for a moment as she did not expect Yang Chen to ask that, she covered her mouth and softly said: “Little Bo is said to have entered through the back door, everybody sees his shy demeanour and gives him some clerk type of work, we usually don’t let him go for things like business deals.”

Yang Chen nodded, everything makes sense now.

Suddenly thinking of something, Yang Chen ‘heihei’ laughs and says: “Actually I’m not good at speaking, and don’t really know how to talk business, I think in the future you guys could also give me miscellaneous work to do, making coffee, brewing tea, sending water and such is more suitable for me, and I could do more physical work, what do you say?”

Surprised, Zhao Hongyan couldn’t resist making an erratic tremble and a ‘gege’ chuckle, even the two plump mountain ranges on her chest shuddered,

“Handsome Yang truly knows how to make jokes, I heard that you are a scholar who graduated from Harvard, in our entire company there are very few who have that level of education. You say you want to do odd jobs like brewing tea and sending water? Who’s going to believe that?”

“I’m serious, believe me.” Yang Chen wrinkles his brows in distress, why is it that nobody believes him when he speaks the truth?

Seeing how Yang Chen doesn’t seem to be lying, Zhao Hongyan could only raise her hands in surrender and say : “Alright alright, I’ll believe you. Actually, you’re still on trial, there isn’t much work for you to do in the first place, I will let our sisters know, in the future you will be responsible for buying us breakfast, brewing coffee, moving things and so on. In the past we took turns to do these, but from here on out you will do these alone, what do you think?”

“Seriously?” Yang Chen happily exclaimed. Buying breakfast, brewing coffee and moving things around, these actions suited him perfectly.

Seeing Yang Chen’s excited expression, Zhao Hongyan doesn’t know how to salvage what originally began as a joke, she whispered to herself “what a weird person”, then nodded.

“Good, this is set, remember to let everybody else know. Tomorrow I will buy breakfast for everybody, things like money can be paid after.” Yang Chen turned back in satisfaction, and continued to tidy up his desk, ignoring Zhao Hongyan lifeless face.

Five minutes later, when Zhao Hongyan once again turned to check what Yang Chen was doing, she was completely shocked.....

She noticed Yang Chen had already dumped all of the documents on the desk into the cabinet under the table, the only thing left on the desk was the computer. While on the computer display, an image familiar to the point it cannot be more familiar was shown——Pokemon!

[TL: Yes Yang Chen is playing Pokemon but specifically this flash game

]

This guy! Is he really planning on becoming a “gopher”? On the first day of work, he has already started to play video games. Zhao Hongyan felt a headache

incoming.

Right at this moment, an old-fashioned and plain-looking lady, wearing a close-fitting black dress and white stockings suddenly walked into the PR department. She calmly asked: "Is today's new recruit Yang Chen here?"

Upon seeing this lady, quite a few employees let out a surprised expression and then looked strangely at Yang Chen.

Regretting that he could not finish his game, Yang Chen raised his head, "I'm here, what is the purpose of elder sister's visit?"

Elder sister!? The employees around almost couldn't hold back their laughter.

As expected, after being addressed like this the lady in black's brows contracted, and her tone turned a little hostile as she said: "I am the CEO's secretary and assistant Wu Yue, the CEO wants to see you, you are to come with me immediately."

CEO? This is my first day, why does the CEO want to see me? Puzzled, Yang Chen stood up. However, without asking any questions, he followed behind the plain lady, and exited the office.

The moment Yang Chen exited, the whole office erupted in gossips, everybody felt that this was unbelievable.

In the department head's office, when Mo Qianni saw what happened outside, even she looked at Yang Chen a little confused.

Chapter 30: CEO

[A great big thanks to Julien.H of LA, USA for sponsoring this](#)

Following the airport runway(flat-chested) figure of Wu Yue onto the elevator to the top floor, of which only consisted of the CEO's office and leisure room. The fashionable top grade transparent-esque materials and a variety of bonsai trees, brought about a bright and spacious feel. With subtle and detailed management in all places, it completely manifested respect towards the identity of the CEO of this big establishment.

"Secretary Wu, what is the CEO calling me for?" Yang Chen curiously asked while following her.

Not answering his question, Wu Yue continued to silently walk down the path with her heels rhythmically clinking against the ground.

Yang Chen couldn't help but think that this woman was cold and did not bother to ask further. However, Yang Chen had some regrets, he should have researched information about Yu Lei International's CEO and not just read information about the recruitment process. If he had prior knowledge, he wouldn't be in such a situation. To suddenly meet the leader of this company, he did not know what to do.

"We've arrived." Walking towards the gorgeously carved milk-white door, Wu Yue's coldly stared at Yang Chen and said, "The CEO is inside, you can enter yourself. You better watch your tone and be respectful!"

Towards Wu Yue's mysteriously strict tone, Yang Chen wasn't angry, but instead felt pity towards this woman. If her character was not cold, why would she look at men as if looking at something extremely displeasing? *I'm* already this manly, didn't you notice how much the other female employees like *me*?

Ignoring the pitiful secretary, Yang Chen opened the door as if it was his second nature, entering the office of Yu Lei Building's highest authority.

The moment he entered, Yang Chen noticed a familiar smell, the air is filled with a faint smell of jasmine, warm yet refreshing. This reminded Yang Chen of his wife Lin Ruoxi. Didn't that frost-faced girl also have this smell?

The entire CEO office was unusually big, way over a 100 square meters, and formed a semi-circle. The circular side was all clean floor-to-ceiling windows from end to end, which allowed the hustle and bustle of the city to be seen from any spot. The thin white translucent curtains blew along with the wind from the AC.

On the floor was a soft Mediterranean wool carpet with diverse and archaic designs. Several bonsai trees were placed on the table and corners of the room, while the entire office's lights helped to complement it.

The crystal chandelier on the ceiling was also a rare collector's item, its exquisite workmanship refracted all the light rays into the office with a dazzling luster, and brought threads of magnificence and mysticism into the whole room.

Several silver-coated metal bookshelves filled with design books covered the room. Next to the shelves, a huge mahogany desk could be seen. Except, at this moment, behind that desk, the seat of the "CEO" was empty.

Puzzled, Yang Chen wondered why the CEO would call him over when he or she wasn't even here. As soon as he thought that, at the right side of the office, a door leading to a rest room opened. A person elegantly walked out from that door.

At that moment, the atmosphere of the room turned incomparably strange as if the oxygen in the room had been removed. The two people stood in front of each other, seemingly forgetting to breathe.

As their gazes met, they each had mixed and complex emotions in their eyes. The two people found it difficult to speak clearly, because this was too ridiculous to believe!!!

"This...You...Me...Erm...I..." Yang Chen always felt that he was mentally strong, but he now realized, that it was only limited to some special circumstances. For an unexpected meeting such as this, Yang Chen was speechless as if he lost his tongue. His mind was now one big mess and he didn't know what to say.

The crystal high-heeled shoe wearing woman in front of him had a pair black

leggings which wrapped around her slender legs emitting a certain type of low-key charm. She wore a beige colored close-fitting business women's suit, which made her figure seem to follow the proportions of the golden ratio brilliantly. Under her slim waist was a beautiful and well-rounded butt that would cause excitement in the blood of all men.

Her head of long black hair was neatly tied up, allowing her graceful swan-like snow-white neck even more dazzling. If it were just these it would still be bearable, what makes her truly irresistible is that heaven-sent face, which was beautiful to the point it makes one powerless against it.

"You what?" Lin Ruoxi looked at the rogue man who had an expression like he's at a loss for words after eating a cockroach, that previous inkling of complex and nervous emotions vanished like smoke in thin air. Turning into a playful and teasing mood she said, "Weren't you always good at talking, good at pretending? What's wrong, can't even speak half a sentence clearly now?"

Yang Chen, his mouth open for a while, in a daze, he couldn't finish a complete sentence. At last, he dashed to the water cooler in the corner of the room. Taking a paper cup and filling it with water, he drained the cup in one gulp while calming his heart. After wiping his mouth, he turned around, and once again faced the sudden appearance of Lin Ruoxi.

At that moment, Ruoxi had already adopted the imposing attitude of a captain of the ship that was Yu Lei International. Calmly sitting on a leather chair, her expression mild, yet cold, she was looking at Yang Chen. Sitting, she looked like a sculpture of a goddess, serene and bright.

"Wow, life's like a play, and a play is truly like life." Yang Chen silently looked at the woman standing in front of him for quite some time. He couldn't help but laugh, "Good good little Ruoxi, my wife, why didn't you tell me earlier that you were Yu Lei's CEO? It would've saved me a whole lot of trouble from finding work. Just give me a minor security job that is both clean and in an office."

"Mr Yang Chen, pay attention to how you address me, in the office, I am your superior." a cold gaze flashed across Lin Ruoxi's beautiful eyes, this man in front of her was still upright a moment ago, why did he suddenly revert back to his playboy tone again?

Yang Chen made a *'heihei'* laugh and said, "In the office you're my superior, so does that mean out of the office I can call you whatever I want?"

"Not allowed!" Lin Ruoxi hurriedly vetoed, it was surprising how this person could think of such a disgusting and goosebumps-inducing form of address. Lin Ruoxi creased her eyebrows and said, "You can call me by my name, but you're not allowed to add on the other disgusting words."

Yang Chen ignored her, as right now his emotions had been calmed. The shock from earlier had already been reduced to a negligible level. So he impolitely pulled over a chair to sit in front of Lin Ruoxi, crossed his legs, sighed and said, "Okay, let us not talk about that, what has CEO Lin called me over for?"

Only now did Lin Ruoxi remember the purpose of calling Yang Chen up. After rolling her eyes at Yang Chen, she turned the computer monitor 180 degrees, pointed at Yang Chen's resume on the screen and said, "Your resume says you have a Master's degree in Harvard University's Market Management, you were a recipient of a full scholarship, and also proficient in both English and French."

Yang Chen looked at his own resume, he could already predict what Ruoxi was going to ask, but could only nod his head, "That is correct, so what?"

"A master's degree from Harvard, proficient in English and French?" Ruoxi looked at Yang Chen as if it was their first meeting as she sized him up, "Don't you sell mutton skewers in the West District? How could you have such a prestigious educational background?"

As he already prepared an excuse, as if reciting from a book, Yang Chen said, "When I was a kid, I was kidnapped and sold to the United States. Then, I was fostered by some people with good intentions. There, I went to college, and also learned French. However, I didn't have any major goals in life, and after my foster parents passed away, I flew back here to sell mutton skewers and idly spend my days. You can ask the peddlers at the West District, they all know that I just came back just half a year ago."

Since Ruoxi was able to lead a big company like Yu Lei International, naturally, she would not be an idiot. How could she trust Yang Chen's words that easily? Her intelligent face revealed a somewhat displeased expression as she made a cold *'hmph'* and said, "Then what about the matter regarding the foreign

languages test? You chose German and Italian and got full marks on both, how did that happen?"

§

Chapter 31: Pledge

This

“Erm.....” Yang Chen regretted randomly choosing the test papers, if he knew this would’ve happened, he would have chosen English and French as written in his resume, but right now he could only brace himself for whatever that comes his way, “That is just a hobby, I’m pretty talented at foreign languages.”

“Oh? What other innate skills do you have then?” Ruoxi asked as she crossed her arms in front of her chest with a face full of disbelief.

Yang Chen scratched his nose, because he was embarrassed to say that he actually had quite a number of innate skills. While he was most adept at fighting and killing, on the more high-tech side, he was also talented in controlling aircraft, tanks, firearms and hacking. However, these talents were not appropriate to share in a conversation, so he simply shook his head and said, “Nope, this brain of mine only has that much capacity, well-appraised, my lord wife.”

“You’re not allowed to call me that!” Lin Ruoxi once again corrects the uncomfortable form of address that nearly turned her eyebrows vertical, and angrily said, “Yang Chen, no matter the reason, since you chose Yu Lei International and became my employee, there are some things I must make clear to you.”

“It can’t be that you want to fire me right?” Yang Chen gloomily raised his hands, “Hey, my dear w...Erm.... Boss Lin, it took me a lot of effort to find a job that fits your requirements, sitting in an office, dignified, and can keep clean at work. You don’t have to be so cruel to me right? Although I’m born a bit more handsome than others, and may cause harm to our fellow colleagues, but a loyal man like me would never womanize. Also, wild flowers can never smell as fragrant as the flower at home, don’t you think so.....”

“Hold your tongue!” Ruoxi couldn’t stand it anymore as she slammed her hand down at the desk. She pouted and her lips formed an arc, this guy did not have any EQ, could it be that this is what all graduates of famous colleges in the US are like? Could it be that the Americans have a different way of looking at things?

Yang Chen tried his best to hold back his laughter, he had no idea why every time he sees the bashful look of his convenient wife, he feels so happy inside.

Like the creative concept written by a poet..... It is most of all the gentleness of bowing one’s head, that is like the lotus flower that the cool breeze cannot compete in shyness.....

(TL:This was a poem written by Xu Zhimo, a famous poet and cousin of Jinyong)

Of course, Lin Ruoxi might look like a lotus flower, but she wasn’t that gentle. Her mature, city woman’s high self-esteem, along with that innocent childishness, was the most attractive thing about her.

Only after a while did Lin Ruoxi calm down. With a gaze full of ‘killing intent’ she said, “Yang Chen, while we are in the company, we must agree upon a three-point-law.”

(TL: 3 rules Yang Chen must follow.)

“Alright, as long as you don’t fire me, I’m fine with anything.” Said Yang Chen, as he didn’t want to argue with this girl.

“First, you’re not allowed to call me by those disgusting names, you must address me as Boss Lin or CEO just like the other employees. Second, you can’t just randomly waltz into my office, and in public, we must maintain a distance. Third, you can’t tell anyone in this company that we are married. Fourth...”

“Wait! Wait! Wasn’t this a three-point-law? How can there be a fourth point?” Yang Chen raised his hand in protest.

“Bam!” Lin Ruoxi slammed both her hands down on the desk, with her eyes widened. “If I say how many laws, that’s how many laws! If I say how many points that’s how many points! You’re not allowed to interrupt me!”

“Erm...yes.” Yang Chen forced a smile.

Lin Ruoxi continued: "Fourth, while you are working here, I will carefully supervise you. You are not allowed to break the status quo of the office. As long as you do your job, I won't fire you. Even if you drift aimlessly, I won't fire you as long as you don't stir up trouble in the office. Fifth..."

After listening to Lin Ruoxi talk for no less than 10 minutes, Yang Chen stifled a yawn. Lin Ruoxi was almost finished speaking.

"Boss Lin, you're finished right? If you have, I'll leave first." Said Yang Chen, as he curried favor with Lin Ruoxi because he was scared that she would burst out in more rules and stipulations, he's already forgotten how many points she has made.

Lin Ruoxi contemplated for a bit and nodded her head: "We'll stop here for today. You must comply with everything I told you. Outside, I don't care what you do, that's your problem and we have a non-aggression pact, but when you're in the office, you must listen to me and abide by the rules."

"Yea yea yea..." Yang Chen hurried to stand up, stretch, and leave the room.

At that moment, in the office, a stylish azure-colored phone rang. Stretching out her hand, Lin Ruoxi picked the phone up, pressed a button, and answered the call. On the other side, the voice of the cold secretary, Wu Yue, could be heard: "Boss Lin, General Manager Xu Zhihong has invited you to attend have dinner with him at the Blue Bay Hotel to talk about this year's partnership for the Autumn Fashion Show."

Hearing the name "Xu Zhihong", Lin Ruoxi made an obvious frown, "Wu Yue, can't we cancel it?"

On the other side of the line, Wu Yue hesitated for a moment and said, "Boss Lin, you have already rejected Mr Xu's private invitations three times, this time's business is regarding the Autumn Fashion Show, and every single exhibition area's construction requires support from Donghua Science & Technology's resources and manpower. The other party's reasons are justified, if we cancel again.....it's a little....."

"Fine, I understand", Lin Ruoxi pursed her lips, "Help me arrange this then, tonight I will attend, book two seats."

“Boss Lin do you require me to accompany you?”

“Nope”, Lin Ruoxi raised her head to stare at Yang Chen who is trying to sneakily leave the room, “I will drive there, you may return home once you get off work.”

“Okay Boss Lin.....” Wu Yue felt things were a little odd, but her unconditional compliance meant she wouldn’t ask anything more.

Ending the call, Yang Chen who was trying to sneak out stopped, turned his head and laughed: “Boss Lin, you can’t possibly want me to attend. If I recall correctly, Blue Bay hotel is a 5-Star hotel, does my rugged appearance look suitable for a 5-star hotel? Also, I can’t make heads nor tails when it comes to business and cannot help.”

Lin Ruoxi coldly smiled and said: “You think I wish to bring you along? You only know how to lose face and talk drivel..... However, marrying you, is precisely to make use of you during such times. Later on in the evening, you must utilize all methods to keep Xu Zhihong away from me, best if you can make him completely give up.”

“Can I make a physical assault?” Yang Chen was somewhat impatient, “How about I just chop him and be done with it.”

“Not allowed! You can’t allow him to get near me, but our business talks must go on!” said Lin Ruoxi, stressing each and every word.

Taking in a deep breath, Yang Chen gazed strangely at Lin Ruoxi, grumbled and said, “Boss Lin, are you employing a husband or an Oscar-winning actor?”

“We have already signed the contract. When in the company of others, you must play your role properly. If you’re a man, you must keep your word.” Lin Ruoxi looked at Yang Chen’s self deflated manner and couldn’t help but feel a small victory.

Time flew like an arrow as Yang Chen returned to the PR department. The ladies, curious as to why Yang Chen was called to the CEO’s office, all made exaggerated speculations till it was time to get off work.

Throughout the whole afternoon, Mo Qianni was huffing and puffing in anger as she couldn’t understand why Lin Ruoxi, who she respected for the longest

time, rejected the proposition to fire Yang Chen and even invited him to her office. Could it be that Yang Chen has some sort of special background? All these questions remained in Mo Qianni's mind and would cause her to have insomnia.

Furthermore, Yang Chen rejected the office ladies' invitation for a welcome cocktail party and by himself, he quietly slipped away to the CEO's special parking lot.

Sitting in Lin Ruoxi's Bentley Arnage, they made their way to the Blue Bay Hotel as planned.

Night time in Zhong Hai City, a man and a woman, neither one knowing what the other was thinking. While the man and wife's first showing of love and affection was caused by a surprise phone call by Xu Zhihong.

Chapter 32: Big Bro

This

Blue Bay Hotel, a 5-star hotel completed only two years ago, it was located on the east of Zhong Hai beside a holiday resort, nestled on a river bank. The entire building had a refreshing and lightly elegant color palette, the dense and sentimental Scottish design makes many of the upper class businessmen enjoy coming here to negotiate deals.

Once she got of the car, Lin Ruoxi walked to Yang Chen’s side, hooked her arm over Yang Chen’s elbow, and created the look of a happily dependent little bird. She dully said, “Let’s go.”

Yang Chen smiled, “Who acts like you? If you want others to think our relationship is intimate, you have to at least smile. With this ice mountain-like expression, people will think you’re a spiteful woman.”

“You are the spiteful woman!” Lin Ruoxi troublingly frowned, in the end still unable to bring out a smile. The truth was, to even grab onto Yang Chen’s arm was considered a huge challenge to her. Lin Ruoxi shook her head and said, “This is fine, as long as we don’t reveal any flaws, this is not a problem.”

Yang Chen thought inside, *no one is going to believe that*, but didn’t say it. *Since this innocent CEO wife wants to act, I will accompany her in this play.*

On the path to enter the hotel, both sides had ancient Greek columns and goddess statues. After entering the hotel, the sides were instead filled with various western artists’ oil paintings of many different sceneries.

The imposingly grandiose decorations, which created a fashionable yet classical fusion, made the whole Blue Bay Hotel filled with an air of honor, even the guests that came and went were immaculately dressed, with arrogant expressions on their faces.

“I don’t like oil paintings.” Yang Chen grumbled, “I always feel that, instead of using oil paintings why not just use a photograph, it’s even clearer too.”

While holding onto Yang Chen’s arm, Lin Ruoxi who was slowly appreciating the artworks on the alley glanced at Yang Chen with disdain, “If you don’t have any appreciation for art, keep quiet, nobody will think you’re a mute.”

“Isn’t it so? Otherwise why would I sell mutton skewers.” Yang Chen made a complacent expression.

Lin Ruoxi rolled her eyes at him, and whispered, “Remember, when we enter later on, if I don’t signal for you to speak, you don’t speak.”

“I will obey, Boss Lin.” Yang Chen couldn’t resist smiling, and nodded.

Being led by two neatly dressed ‘Etiquette ladies’, they walked towards a private booth facing the lake, while raising his head, Yang Chen noticed that the private booth’s name turned out to be the strongly religiously styled “Judas”.

(TL: ‘Etiquette ladies’, seen those ladies that bring bouquets to medal winners in the olympics? Their job is like a waitress but not in a restaurant, an air stewardess but not on a plane. But I have no idea what they’re called in english thus etiquette ladies it is.)

The milky white decorated wooden door at that time opened, a man wearing a black Hugo Boss suit entered. This man had curly hair, a rugged beard and he wore a simple smile. Upon gesturing a “please enter” with his hands he said, “Welcome Miss Lin, our family’s young master has been waiting.”

It was evident that the man excluded Yang Chen who was holding Lin Ruoxi’s hand from his welcome gesture, and did not even take one look at him.

Indifferently nodding her head, Ruoxi led Yang Chen into the private room which was spacious, the scent of lavender scattered all over the place was just enough to raise one’s spirits.

“Ruoxi, I finally get to meet you.” A magnetic voice came out from the sofa. The speaker wore a blue dress shirt, had a head full of neat short hair, and a pale handsome face. He possessed the rare temperament of reverence from the inside out, this type of temperament cannot be nurtured by an average family.

Expressionlessly, Ruoxi nodded her head, “Boss Xu, I’ll be troubling you.”

Facing Ruoxi’s cold indifference, Xu Zhihong wasn’t even fazed. Still equipping the appearance of a mature man, he wore a face full of smiles. “I’ve invited you quite a number of times, and it’s quite rare for you to be free. Your father has talked to me about you for quite some time, saying how you’ve been really busy at work. As a matter of fact, I do not mind, the fact that you were willing to come and join me for dinner alone makes me feel content.”

It was hard to think that a general manager of a huge company, who was also the eldest heir for one of Zhong Hai City’s 5 greatest families, would welcome a woman with so much affection. “To come and join me for dinner makes me feel content.” These words, what kind of effect will they have? It’s unknown how other women would react, but Lin Ruoxi was unfazed, and with great difficulty, she only said a few words, “You’re too kind.”

Xu Zhihong too did not feel anything was wrong as he personally pulled a chair and invited her, “Come, please sit Ruoxi.”

From the start to finish, it was as if Xu Zhihong and his servant did not see Ruoxi holding a man’s hand, as if that man did not exist at all, similar to thin air.

Lin Ruoxi felt that she had underestimated Xu Zhihong’s intelligence. His way of handling this was to just disregard Yang Chen. It seemed as if he had already thoroughly investigated Yang Chen’s background. Who would believe that a big corporation’s CEO would marry a previously unacquainted mutton skewers seller? It appears that Xu Zhihong had long known of Lin Ruoxi’s fake marriage plan.

Lin Ruoxi had no choice but to release Yang Chen’s hand, and sit in the designated seat. Yang Chen did not have any problem with that as he went to find a chair to sit next to Ruoxi.

Right at that moment, a simple minded smiling man appeared right in front of Yang Chen and in one movement, he pushed the chair back. Still chuckling, he said, “I don’t recognize you, who are you mister? My Young Master only invited Miss Lin to this gathering.”

Not waiting for either Yang Chen or Ruoxi to respond, Xu Zhihong, a face full of smiles went: “Hairy Ball, you’re not allowed to be this rude. I’m sure this person

must be Ruoxi's brother of some sort, or else how could they arrive together in such an intimate manner?"

Big Brother? Yang Chen was a little surprised by this pair of master and servant's skills in acting, and smiled: "Wow...Remarkable, you guys are all aware of the fact that my family's little Ruoxi frequently calls me *"Big bro"* in bed."

"....."

Silence! It was like everybody forgot to breathe!

Don't even mention about the master-servant pair, Xu Zhihong and Hairy Ball who wanted to ridicule Yang Chen, even Lin Ruoxi choked after hearing Yang Chen's abrupt words, she widened her eyes, and looked as if she wanted to strangle Yang Chen to death. *This rascal! How dare he say such words!!! Although these words were meant to retaliate against Xu Zhihong and Hairy Ball's provocations, but this is too... too.....*

After hearing such peculiar words, Ruoxi couldn't help but remember her and Yang Chen's affair a few days ago. Her cheeks flushed red, lovable and appetizing.

As for Xu Zhihong, seeing Lin Ruoxi suddenly displaying an expression of bashfulness like a little girl, first, he was bewitched by her sudden change, but upon thinking again, for Lin Ruoxi to feel shy from that man's words, his heart turned cold and he couldn't help but wonder.....Is their relationship really not that simple!?

Xu Zhihong, whose complexion turned ugly and pale, laughed with great difficulty and said: "This mister sure knows how to joke around, since you've come, you're a friend. Hairy Ball, you're not allowed to joke around with this mister, everyone, please sit back down.

Yang Chen, couldn't help but to assess Xu Zhihong a little higher, it seems that he isn't a brainless 'fuerdai', he even knows how to endure.

(TL: fuerdai is a term used to describe rich kids in China, it means 'the second generation of the rich'.)

Lin Ruoxi was worthy of being called a successful business woman, although those words made her pissed off, she continuously remembered her primary

goal for coming here, and quickly calmed her heart down. She then said to Xu Zhihong: “Boss Xu, since it’s still early, lets first discuss the Autumn Fashion Show.”

“Yes Yes.” Xu Zhihong no longer paid any attention to Yang Chen, and quickly reverted back into an expression of a graceful gentleman. He smiled and said: “Whatever Ruoxi says shall be agreed upon, today the host shall follow the guest’s wishes.”

§

Chapter 33: Truly Too Caring

Although Xu Zhihong said that to please Lin Ruoxi, once the discussions actually started, it would become a tug of war. Things that ought to be yielded should be, and things that ought to be fought for should be as well.

In actuality, Xu Zhihong was very clear, dealing with women like Lin Ruoxi, the art of sweet talk does not work at all. As both of them were businessmen, he must utilize methods to convince the other party, if a man gives up his career for a woman, how will this sort of man win the heart of a strong woman like Lin Ruoxi?

Just like Xu Zhihong, once the official talks began, Lin Ruoxi's words started increasing as well. Her interpersonal relationship skills may not be that great, but once she started talking, this ridiculously beautiful girl also displayed a somewhat "bitchy" demeanor. Once she started to argue, she wouldn't give up until she reaped the maximum amount of benefits.

So, when an hour passed, Yang Chen, who was bored to death, couldn't help but to stare just like what Hairy Ball was doing.

It was evident that Hairy Ball was interested in Yang Chen throughout the discussion, he sized him up and attempted to provoke him by glaring at him.

Towards these types of men who didn't care about their appearance, Yang Chen expressed his dislike. Although he could measure Hairy Ball's strength with a single glance, which was comparable to an average "elite international mercenary", in his division, it could be comparable to an instructor for the Marines. However, in the eyes of Yang Chen, these people could not be called "fighters/soldiers...", and were only viewed as "average people".

And so, while Hairy Ball was provoking Yang Chen, with loathsome eyes, Yang Chen had the urge to give him a slap. But, after thinking how he was a white-collar worker now, it would be wise to not create extra trouble and take into account his wife's business.

Therefore, Yang Chen could only sit in his chair, take out the phone Lin Ruoxi

gifted him, download the game 'Puzzle Bobble', and seriously focus on 'popping bubbles'.

[TL: The popping bubbles is a joke on shooting the gun, you know which gun.]

"Yes, I hope Boss Xu can stick to his promises, this year's Autumn Fashion Show, with your company's stage designs and our company's Fall wear, it is certain that we will capture a wider market." Lin Ruoxi finally said as she signed the contract. Due to speaking for an extended amount of time, her cheeks were flushed displaying her hard to come by supple beauty.

While looking at this scene, Xu Zhihong's eyes dulled for a moment before nodding: "Of course, I hope that our partnership goes smoothly."

Only when the two swapped the documents could this long-winded discussion which lasted till 7PM be considered over.

"Since business is concluded, I expect that you are now hungry Ruoxi, let's have the food served now."

Lin Ruoxi was actually quite hungry, just like other women, in order to maintain her figure, Lin Ruoxi only ate a small sandwich for lunch. She was working till now, and her stomach was rumbling from hunger as she lightly nodded her head.

Xu Zhihong clapped, and the waiters near the door immediately started to get busy.

The dinner was of formal western cuisine. While the dinnerware was being set on the table, Lin Ruoxi glanced towards Yang Chen with worry in her eyes. Obviously, the sudden switch to western cuisine was to embarrass Yang Chen.

"This mister is named?" Xu Zhihong asked with an insincere smile towards Yang Chen.

"Surnamed Yang, named Chen." Yang Chen yawned. He was both too hungry and sleepy. Upon seeing that it was western cuisine, he whispered in his heart, this is not even as filling as a bowl of noodles.

"Even though it's my first time meeting Yang Chen, I did not prepare a proper gift. I specially ordered a bottle of Nebbiolo from the year 1992, and I hope that

Mister Yang can evaluate it for me.” As he finished saying that, he signaled a waiter to bring over the bottle of beautifully packaged red wine.

In his heart, Yang Chen couldn't help but sneer while staying silent. Using three fingers, he lightly raised the glass, allowing the waiter to pour wine in it.

The waiter only poured a bit before stopping.

Yang Chen didn't feel anything out of place and he lightly swirled the liquid around the glass, smelt the wine, placed the tilted glass to his lips, and slowly savoured a sip.

Upon seeing this action, the once tense Lin Ruoxi slowly relaxed. Having obtained some relief, she remembered that this hoodlum grew up in the United States. He must have had traditional western cuisine before but she didn't know if he had tasted a famous red wine like Nebbiolo. Hopefully he doesn't speak drivel, even losing a little face is fine.

Xu Zhihong's eyes flashed with a tinge of worry, smiling, he asked, “Mister Yang, what do you think?”

“The ingredients of Nebbiolo, mainly comes from Italy's Piedmont region's Barolo and Barbaresco municipalities. If it is of the highest grade, it can only match an ordinary French Margaux Bordeaux red wine, it's actually not particularly good. However, this type of wine brings with it a tinge of lilac, pepper, apricot, dried plum and rose, more importantly it has the feeling of bitter chocolate, which is why it can still considered avant-garde.” Yang Chen replied nonchalantly, as if this wine was made by him.

From this, Xu Zhihong felt a bit of surprise. In actuality, even though he drank these types of wines on a regular basis, he could not give out such a detailed description. He would not believe that Yang Chen only guessed all these by luck, as all his other movements regarding western cuisine were all in accordance with the manners of an educated gentleman from high society.

“True enough, it seems that Mr. Yang Chen is truly not ordinary, it's no wonder that Ruoxi wanted you to accompany her.” Xu Zhihong fakely smiled with his skin but not his flesh.

“Just a bit.” Yang Chen did not have any interest in accompanying this

hypocritical man for a conversation. He straightforwardly says, “Without a trick or two up my sleeves, how can I manage to become the husband of my family’s little Ruoxi? Isn’t that right, my wife?” With that said, he looked towards Lin Ruoxi with a questioning expression.

Lin Ruoxi’s lovable dimples suddenly flashed red. Although she knew Yang Chen did this in order to help her obstruct Xu Zhihong attempts, but being called ‘wife’ in this situation, her heart almost couldn’t bear it. ‘Badum badum’ her heart nearly jumped up to her throat, she rigidly nodded her head, gave a thin voice of agreement, quickly lowered her head and started sipping at her cup to cover her embarrassment.

Xu Zhihong could not believe that this mutton skewer selling man would actually dare to flirt directly in his face, and jointly put on a play with Lin Ruoxi to ward himself away. With one hand gripping tightly onto the crystal clear wine glass, even his veins were visible, his complexion was a little green from the anger as he forced a laugh and said: “So the two of you have already tied the knot, I am truly sorry……. I have been rude. “

“No no”, Yang Chen didn’t mind and magnanimously smiled: “I am aware, with my standards, for me to have married my family’s little Ruoxi is like sticking a fresh flower in a mound of cow dung. For director Xu to not realize is not surprising, as a person, I’m not too bothered by things like this.

Originally, I had been worried that with the little cash in my pocket, how could I bring my wife to eat a good meal? I never thought that Boss Xu would invite us out, you are *truly too caring*.” What Yang Chen implied was, *you* are merely a money sending idiot.

Resisting his anger, Xu Zhihong pursed his lips and took a sip of red wine. Finally speaking, he smiled: “Mr. Yang, must be joking, to be able to obtain Ruoxi’s eye, how could one’s pocket lack money? On that note, let’s start eating.”

“Great, bring in the food.” Yang Chen said as if he didn’t notice Xu Zhihong’s fire-emitting glare. All smiles, he picked up his cutlery to allow the waiter behind him to place the appetizer in front of him. Minding his own business, he started to eat.

After hearing Xu Zhihong's words which were full of anger, Lin Ruoxi started to feel apprehensive. However, upon seeing Yang Chen fully focused on eating and drinking like a country bumpkin, her heart lightened up.

This person simply can't stay upright, he is obviously very proficient in eating western-style food and western dining etiquette to the point even she is surprised, yet he eats like a slob on purpose. He is really unfathomable.....

Gradually, Lin Ruoxi's worries seemed to have dissipated into thin air. Who cares about him? Things have already gotten like this, / could only take one step at a time. With this thought, Lin Ruoxi felt hungry and she too started to move her fork and knife.

Chapter 34: Who's The Crude One?

Mildly NSFW

Finally, they finished eating. Thanks to Yang Chen's huge appetite, they had to prepare another 3 servings of steak before he was satisfied.

Xu Zhihong could only feel his blood dripping out of his heart. Before his eyes, was a content and burping mutton skewer seller who from the start, had been minding himself the whole time. For him, this extra loss of money did not amount to anything, but Yang Chen's rascal-like appearance, made Xu Zhihong lose the strength to fight back. Every verbal attack only felt like punching at cotton, a waste of strength.

"Thank you for the hospitality Boss Xu, I believe we should get going now." said Lin Ruoxi as she wiped her mouth in a refined manner, and stood up.

At this moment, Xu Zhihong, who was already exhausted, smiled and said, "Ruoxi, it's already this late, wouldn't it be better for me to allow Hairy Ball to drive you back? Driving at night is not safe."

"No need, no need", Yang Chen responded, "Doesn't she have me? After eating 4 steaks, my strength is at its peak. Boss Xu, your steaks are impressive, it's like taking Viagra! It guarantees that I can be vigorous the whole night!"

Upon hearing such vulgar words, the waiters in the private room all couldn't help but burst out laughing. They gazed at Yang Chen and Lin Ruoxi with dubious expressions, but even an idiot could realize what they were thinking about.

Lin Ruoxi blushed, and secretly pinched Yang Chen's arm. She felt too embarrassed from the loss of face!

Inside Xu Zhihong's heart, curses such as "brute", "country bumpkin", and "beast" could be heard, yet on the outside, his face was rigid and unmoving as he had to force his mouth to talk: "You're too polite Mister Yang, it should be a given. Hairy Ball, please see them out...."

Not waiting to stay in the private room any longer, Lin Ruoxi dragged Yang

Chen's hand and quickly left from there. Being in the room full of waiters, and getting strange gazes from them made her face turn scorching hot.

Only when he finished seeing those two out did Hairy Ball adopt a sloppy appearance as he went back into the private room. Xu Zhihong had already relaxed his body and was sitting on the big sofa letting a waitress from the Blue Bay Hotel massage his shoulders.

"Finished seeing them off?" Xu Zhihong asked with his eyes half closed, his voice downcast.

Fishing a cigarette from his pocket, he lit it up and fiercely took a couple of breaths. He naively smiled and showed a mouth full of yellow teeth, "I've seen them out, Miss Lin drove pretty quickly, leaving behind only a wisp of exhaust smoke from her car before disappearing into the distance."

"Hmph..." Xu Zhihong coldly laughed, "This stupid woman, she thinks she can get away from me just because she brought a man to hinder me? She is underestimating me way too much."

"Boss, do you want me to find this man surnamed Yang and get rid of him? Once this little youngster realizes who he is dealing with, he won't dare to act this cocky." Hairy Ball said, swinging his arm in a slicing motion.

"You need not do anything for now. I only need to send out a couple of capable people, but I first need to gain knowledge of his bottom line. I do not believe that a mutton skewer seller can know anything about Nebbiolo. Furthermore, even if he is a bit vulgar, he doesn't seem like an idiot."

"Boss, you are thinking too much, in this day and age, you can find out everything about a person online, nothing can be hidden. If he truly is such a big shot, why is he selling mutton skewers on the streets?" Hairy Ball scoffed.

"Even a dam, a thousand miles long, can be broken down by an ant nest, so if you are to do something, do it with caution. This is why you are the subordinate while I am the boss." Xu Zhihong responded faintly with his eyes half-closed.

"Yes. Yes, Whatever boss says goes. Tomorrow, I ought to go on the streets and find people to rough him up. Even if he ends up dead, he can only blame himself." Hairy Ball then scratched his head and asked, "Boss, why do you tie

yourself down like this? Miss Lin is really beautiful, but in Zhong Hai City, there are countless beauties for your taking. Unlike me, with my looks, if I don't wave a couple of big bills around, even a prostitute wouldn't look at me." said Hairy Ball while playing with his beard.

"What do you know?", Xu Zhihong responded, "A woman's beauty is only secondary. Lin Ruoxi's appearance, although there may not be many who can match her in Zhong Hai, but what about the whole nation? What about the whole world? The world is so big, beauties can be counted by the millions."

"Then why do you so stubbornly chase Miss Lin, Boss?" Hairy Ball didn't seem to understand.

"Hairy Ball, do you think that a single woman, especially a woman who was beautiful at an early age, who managed to take total control of Yu Lei International is only a pretty face? Her temperament, in Zhong Hai's high society circle, is famous for its coldness, with almost no friends, she managed to pass through all hurdles. In these past years, Yu Lei's stock did nothing but rise, do you think it is that easy to do?

"Is it possible that Boss wants to find a woman to help with the business?"

"She is a management genius, but that doesn't mean I am any worse than her. It is only that at Yu Lei, in the hearts of all employees, her existence has a certain kind of prestige. That is why they are able to achieve such results there." Xu Zhihong composedly said, "The reason why I want to obtain her, besides the fact that she is worthy enough to be conquered, is that I believe she is the only woman able to be with me. There is another reason, but you would not understand..."

"I truly don't understand," Hairy Ball smiled back, "Boss is definitely smarter than I am, or else why would I follow you?"

Xu Zhihong hummed in agreement: "You don't have to act like this, that other woman that you like, Mo Qianni also works at Yu Lei International. If I manage to get Lin Ruoxi, it would be synonymous with taking over Yu Lei. Upon taking over Yu Lei International, the women there of Yu Lei, would be close to your grasp.

Upon hearing the name "Mo Qianni", Hairy Ball's two eyes immediately brightened up. Licking his lips, he released a breath of cold air, "Boss, how can

you mention that woman again, I dream of Mo Qianni's ass and boobs even when I sleep. If we can manage to get her in bed, that would be amazing, I would be wrung dry! It would have been fine if you didn't mention her, but now, tonight, I have to go out to a nightclub and find a chicken!"

(TL: In chinese, the word '鸡' 'ji' means chicken, but sometimes refers to a prostitute)

"Go! It seems that you are even more crude than that mutton skewer seller!" Xu Zhihong narrowed his eyes at Hairy Ball for a second, while cursing without restraint.

Hairy Ball didn't mind what he had heard and quickly left the private room.

Not long after Hairy Ball left, Xu Zhihong slowly extended his hand and in one move grabbed the wrist of the waitress who was giving him a massage. Expressionlessly, he asked, "How much money?"

The waitress distractedly starred and the flirtatious face with large amounts of foundation blushed with bashfulness. She hesitated a bit, then responded, "Five... five thousand... this is my first time doing this...."

"Hmph", Xu Zhihong coldly laughed, "Only 5 thousand, sluts will be sluts, as cheap as a bitch. Come to the front, take off your clothes, and start by giving me head.

The woman, upon hearing these insults, nearly started crying. However, upon thinking of the 5 thousand at stake, she endured those words. Putting out an enchanting smile, she walked in front of Xu Zhihong and slowly started to take off her clothes.

Not a long time passed until a woman's miserable moans could be heard accompanied by a man's unrestrained insults.

Smoking in front of the door, Hairy Ball had already drove away all other waiters guaranteeing that there was no one around them. Only he was there laughing to himself, "Boss was calling me crude, yet he even found a chicken quicker than I did...those with money sure like to show off...."

Chapter 35: Wait For Me Tonight

Whilst returning back to their villa at Dragon Garden, Yang Chen attempted to speak to Lin Ruoxi, but she had driven the whole way back cold-faced and unwavering. She just simply ignored anything Yang Chen said, as if he did not exist.

Facing a snow goddess such as Lin Ruoxi, Yang Chen helplessly closed his eyes and proceeded to rest for a bit. In actuality, Yang Chen was pretty clear, his words that he said at the Blue Bay hotel had already provoked his sensitive wife. However, at that time, in order to repel Xu Zhihong away, she did not say anything, but upon the end of the play, her resentment towards him finally erupted.

Only when they finally arrived at the villa's entrance, did Lin Ruoxi coldly say the words, "Get off the car."

"Are you not coming as well?" Yang Chen curiously asked.

"I still have things to do, you get off first."

"Oh..." Yang Chen looked at Lin Ruoxi with a profound smile, "So it turns out that even CEO Lin needs a nightlife, why didn't you say so earlier? Haha, I am very generous, and won't get jealous."

Although she felt there wasn't any need to explain to this repulsive rascal, Lin Ruoxi felt that if she let him indulge in his flights of fancy, it would be too much injustice to her. Therefore, wrinkling her brows, she answered, "I have something on, it isn't like you think."

With a knowing expression, very slowly, he walked out of the car and waved towards Lin Ruoxi: "Hope you have fun."

Too lazy to continue dealing with him, Lin Ruoxi reversed her car and quickly departed the villa.

Looking towards the rapidly disappearing tail lights from the car, Yang Chen had an expression of deep thought. Naturally, he wouldn't believe that a woman

like Lin Ruoxi would rashly decide to go to a nightclub. At that time, when he was at the bar and met Lin Ruoxi, come to think of it, it was probably one of the only times she had visited such a place. It's so late now, where could she be going?

Arriving back at his room, Wang Ma caringly delivered a plate of watermelon to him. Towards this "fake" Young Master, she took care of him with great care and love.

After taking a cold shower, Yang Chen planned on sleeping, but unexpectedly, at this time, his phone rang.

Yang Chen did not know that many people. Upon receiving this phone from Lin Ruoxi, the only people who knew Yang Chen's number, aside from Lin Ruoxi and Wang Ma, was Rose and the Li Family.

As expected, glancing at the caller ID, sure enough, it was Li Jingjing.

Upon thinking of that gentle temperament, how she was so quiet and shy, a burst of warmth flowed through Yang Chen's heart. Answering the call, he softly responded "Jingjing".

"Big brother Yang..." from the phone, Li Jingjing's voice seemed to be trembling a bit as if it was difficult for her to speak.

"I'm here, What's up?"

"Have...Have I interrupted your sleep?" Li Jingjing apprehensively asked.

Yang Chen couldn't help but laugh, then responded: "Yes, just now, I was in a dream where I was with you when you called me."

The other side went silent for a moment, finally, Li Jingjing made a "Pu-Chi" chuckle, and said: "Big brother Yang sure knows how to joke around. Be careful, don't let sister-in-law hear that."

Hearing Li Jingjing laugh from her heart, Yang Chen also relaxed. He was afraid that Li Jingjing might have taken the news too hard and as a result, became depressed. It seemed that although she was feeling a little down, she still remained strong.

"Hehe, there is nothing to be afraid of. Instead, with you calling me this late, there must be something urgent....."

Li Jingjing once again became silent for a while before finally whispering: “Big brother Yang, I...I’m scared...”

“Scared? Scared of what?” Yang Chen doubtfully asked.

“It’s Chen Feng. Today, that person came to our house. He demanded that I become his girlfriend, or else he would tear down my father’s stall.” Li Jingjing said at last, with a sobbing voice. It appeared that she had already cried before calling him, which was why her voice was slightly trembling.

Yang Chen’s eyes narrowed into slits, his voice turning somewhat deep, “Jingjing, speak clearly, what was the cause and how did it come to this?”

Upon feeling the change in Yang Chen’s emotions, Li Jingjing started to calm down as she intermittently told him the whole story.

The cause of this event happened on the morning the day before yesterday. That day, Li Jingjing accompanied Old Li to the market, Old Li set up his stall, while Li Jingjing proceeded to purchase groceries. In the past, Li Jingjing was either at university studying, or away for internships. It could be said that she only truly returned to Zhong Hai recently. Therefore, when Li Jingjing went to the market, Old Li introduced her to everybody for the first time. It was the first time meeting Li Jingjing for most of them.

Coincidentally, having nothing to do, Chen Feng brought his hoodlums out at that moment. Upon meeting the pretty and pure Li Jingjing, it only took one look for Chen Feng to want her as a girlfriend. Chen Feng was also cunning, he did not deal with Li Jingjing directly, but instead said, if she did not agree, then there would be no need to open Old Li’s stall. Their whole family better not think of having a good life in the West District.

Being the commoners that they were, how can Old Li’s family dare go against Chen Feng? After all, his father, Chen Dehai walks the path of both clean and dirty. His father was an elder in Western Union and was considered a major figure.

Therefore, Old Li couldn’t set up his stall these past two days. Even when teaching at school, Li Jingjing noticed people following her. Upon returning home, Chen Feng came again, urging her to quickly make a decision.

The whole Li family was comparable to a cicada in the wintertime. Sending their only child to the tiger's den which was the Chen family was obviously out of the picture. However, once their friends and relatives heard that they had got into trouble with the Western Union's Chen family, they too did not dare to help. As for going to the police, the Li Family had no guts to. After all, once they reported to the police, wasn't it the same as going against to the Chen family?

Hearing Li Jingjing's words, a difficult to suppress flame was burning in his heart. Originally, he had planned to wait a few more days before taking care of the matter with West District's underworld, then deal with the Chen father and son at the same time, but now, it seemed like things would go the other way. He would first get rid of the Chen family.

"Don't cry Jingjing, everything will be alright. Trust your big brother Yang." said Yang Chen, consoling her.

Li Jingjing was still sobbing a bit. When a girl from an ordinary family encounters an event like this, aside from shedding tears, there was simply nothing else she could do. If Li Jingjing was not at the end of her rope, she wouldn't have called Yang Chen for help, because despite knowing that Yang Chen was pretty capable, she was not sure if he could help solve her problem.

"Big brother Yang, you mustn't do anything stupid. I heard that the Chen family even has quite a number of guns!" Li Jingjing abruptly remembered, anxiously reminding Yang Chen.

"Hehe, don't worry, in a few days, I still plan on visiting you at Zhong Hai Yi Zhong. When that moment comes, you can just check if I am missing an arm or a leg." Yang Chen laughed, "It's not early, Jingjing, hurry up and get some sleep. I will help you settle these problems, you don't even need to tell to your parents about this. By tomorrow, everything will be settled."

"Really?" Li Jingjing was pleasantly surprised.

"Has your big brother Yang ever lied to you?"

"Then...be careful big brother Yang." Although Li Jingjing did not know what he was going to do, she still warned him softly.

Ending the call, Yang Chen made a deep hum, then dialed another number on

his phone.

On the other end of the phone was a lazy, flirtatious woman's voice, "Hubby.....why did you suddenly remember to give me a call at such a time..." The only person capable of seductively calling "hubby" like that was naturally Rose.

Yang Chen inhaled a breath of cold air. Upon remembering Rose's flexible, soft and well-rounded body, he immediately thought of flying to her bed before doing anything else. However, upon remembering Li Jingjing's predicament, it was better to dismiss such dirty thoughts. Straightforwardly, he asked, "I need information about Chen Dehai and his address. The more detailed the better.

When dealing with Chen Dehai, naturally, it would be in one's best interest to first find information on him. As West Union Society's arch-enemy, the Red Thorn Society's leader Rose was the person most familiar with Chen Dehai.

Rose was a woman who knew how to make men happy, and upon hearing Yang Chen's tone, she did not ask any further questions. After a while, she simply responded, "Alright, I'll immediately send it to your inbox."

Satisfied, Yang Chen laughed: "My darling Rose, you are too caring. *Wait for me tonight*. After finishing my task, I'll come and find you."

"You've said it, you mustn't go back on your words." Rose gladly laughed. Whether Yang Chen's task was dangerous, she didn't even bother asking. It was as if she had already confirmed that the Chen father and son had received the death sentence!

Chapter 36: Visiting The Chen Residence

Chen Dehai could be considered a top class person in Zhong Hai City. Back then, he had come to Zhong Hai from the north to find a job and chanced upon catching the eye of a small boss in the underworld. From then on, he managed to work his way from a hired thug to the position of being the right hand man of that small boss.

Chen Dehai's methods were naturally fierce and with his disposition of being naturally mistrustful, in just a few years, he managed to expand that small boss' territory, leading it to become a rather powerful force in the West District.

In these past 10 years, Chen Dehai once again abruptly emerged and helped the head of the West Union Society, Situ Mingze, which was also Rose's father. By getting rid of his original boss, he became one of Situ Mingze's most important figures.

Because Chen Dehai had already grasped control of majority of the forces that belonged to that triad's boss, when he successfully seized the old boss' position, he did not meet much resistance. Many people had long determined him as the next boss, so they drifted with the current and supported him in taking up that position.

That is to say, without Chen Dehai, even if West Union Society wanted to become the overlord of the West District, they probably would've needed to wait a couple more years. There were people who once joked, saying how Chen Dehai was just like Wu Sangui letting the Manchus out, betraying his king to crown himself. But nobody knew if and when he will rebel again.

(TL: Wu Sangui is a famous general of the 17th century whose betrayal led to the fall of the Ming Dynasty)

Although there were countless whispers outside, inside the West Union Society, Chen Dehai was actually looked upon with great importance. After all, if one was to talk about the power they wielded, inside Western Union, he was one of the strongest elders within.

Moreover, the more someone seemed like a small fry on the surface, the more easy it was to defend, therefore West Union Society's president Situ Mingze always treated Chen Dehai well, the two's relationship was exceptionally harmonious.

After Yang Chen briefly looked at Chen Dehai's data, the first thing he felt were these words, "ambitious and ruthless", without a care for the world's ethics and morals, and he even more so doesn't care about the rules of Jiang Hu. Everything he does, is to exchange for an even higher backer, to crawl up to a higher position with firm steps.

(TL: Jiang Hu could mean the pugilist world of martial arts or the underworld with things like triads)

If nothing unexpected happened, a person like this would be someone who could live till his later years, which was rare in the underworld. This was because he himself is a traitor, and is clear on how to prevent others from betraying him.

"It's a pity, you gave life to an idiot of a son." Yang Chen softly muttered, closed the laptop, then memorized all the map details that Rose provided to him.

Downtown at night, like a bunch of glittering neon light, a clear distinction was formed in comparison to the public roads of the suburbs.

Half an hour later, Yang Chen stopped his BMW outside a little public park in Zhong Hai's western suburbs, and in the surroundings were dilapidated residential areas. Chen Dehai's private villa, was right beside a river pass one kilometre away. If he stopped the car too close, it would be difficult to conceal himself.

Yang Chen changed into a fitting black short-sleeved shirt, and a pair of blackish-brown trousers on his bottom. The cool wind of the night blew past, while Yang Chen hopped a few times, and made some strange stretching movements. His whole body gave out "Pi Pa Pi Pa" cracking sounds, and only about two minutes later, did he put an end to these movements.

"Hu....." With a long exhale, Yang Chen raised his head towards the hiding new moon in the sky, revealing a somewhat relaxed smile, "Luckily my body hasn't turned rusty."

Right after those words, Yang Chen's figure disappeared from his original position in an instant, and when he appeared again, he was already tens of metres over and above a three-storey apartment's roof. Agile like a leopard cat that excels in leaping around, running and jumping from rooftop to rooftop, he headed towards the brightly lit villa by the river pass.

In less than two minutes, Yang Chen was already crouching on top of a tall tree, in less than 30 metres in front of him, was the Chen residence. It covered over a huge 800 square metres of space with a five-storey apartment building.

According to the data, Chen Dehai's wife died because of breast cancer soon after giving birth to Chen Feng, and so this huge fort-like building was only occupied by the father and son. But of course, the guards around to protect them also took up a significant amount of space.

The higher one's position was, the more worried one would be for their own safety and Chen Dehai was no exception.

Yang Chen took a rough glance and saw that to enter the Chen residence there was only the main door, which had 8 black-clothed sentries standing in line just in front of the entrance. In the courtyard there would occasionally be several bodyguard-esque people walking past for inspection, but it seemed like the frequency of those people weren't high, and if one carefully snuck in, it would not be that difficult to enter the apartment building.

Yang Chen wouldn't believe that such a big area only had this little amount of people, and looking at it carefully, it seemed that most of the henchmen were loitering inside the apartment building, to stay close and protect the Chen father and son.

Infiltrating the villa was not a difficult thing to do for Yang Chen. However, this wasn't his goal, and what Yang Chen was considering was how to locate Chen Dehai and Chen Feng, the father and son. So Yang Chen felt that it would be better to just catch someone and ask them.

Done thinking, Yang Chen's body once again left the tall tree's branch, and when he reappeared he was already at the entrance of the Chen residence with a harmless smile.

The 8 henchmen were first surprised by the sudden appearance of Yang Chen,

then they hurriedly surrounded him.

“Halt, who are you!? Do you where this place is?!” The leading man with a big physique sternly asked.

Yang Chen did not reply, and when he was about 5 metres away, he gently tapped on the ground with his toes, and his body flew like an arrow, abruptly leaping towards the 8 men!

The 8 people simply did not even have time to react, their pistols were near their bosoms, but in such close range there simply wasn't a chance to draw them. One of them tried to raise his fists to block but all of a sudden, he was hit by Yang Chen's fist for a moment, then felt an acute heart-tearing lung-splitting pain, it was like the bones in his hands were completely shattered!

If one watched from afar it would seem like Yang Chen's body rejected the earth's gravity, he broke through the 8 men while his whole body was in the air and somersaulting a whole 360 degrees, like a black tornado. Both of Yang Chen's hands and legs came into contact with the 8 men, namely the 8 people's fists, palms, chests and stomachs received intimate contact.

All this happened in a flash, and without waiting for the 8 people to react, they were already down on the ground like they were nailed to it. Because of a part of their body's pain they let out mean and ferocious looks, and wails of “Oww Oww” were uncontrollably released.

The leading man with a big physique felt all the bones in his hands shatter, and he knew he had met a tough adversary, so he no longer dared to resist. In cold sweat he hurriedly stretched his hand and pressed on the walkie-talkies' talk button as an attempt to notify everyone inside.

Unexpectedly, someone wearing sports shoes suddenly kicked his cheeks, and smashed the walkie-talkie into pieces. The big man's head tilted, his eyes, ears, mouth and nose shot out strings of blood, and a serious depression appeared on his skull, while dark red liquid poured over the ground, with one look anyone could tell he was dead!

The moment the other 7 people got up, they witnessed this miserable scene, and sucked in a cold breath. The young man in front of their eyes, had actually maintained a faint smile like before. If there truly was a fiend from hell, that

fiend's smile would probably be just like this!

The 7 people who originally wanted to make a report all had cold sweat overflowing as they looked at Yang Chen, and they were frightened to the point that they didn't even dare to budge.

Yang Chen was very satisfied with this result, as for the member of the underworld he killed, he didn't feel any guilt. After all, if he piled up all the number of lives taken with his hands, they would reach up as high as a skyscraper.

"I'm in a rush, so I'm not going to beat around the bush with you. I want to know where Chen Feng and Chen Dehai are right now, and if you guys can speak up, then you can get lost, but if you don't speak up, I will help you to get lost."

Yang Chen's tone of speech was relaxed, as if he was merely asking a passer-by for a lighter to light his cigarette while on the streets, but to these 7 people's ears, the words "get lost" sounded like the summons from the god of death.

Chapter 37: Mistreatment

NSFW

Due to the 7 people competing to cooperate, Yang Chen quickly learned the specific positions of Chen Dehai and his son, while those 7 people, were in a moment knocked unconscious and thrown to the side of the road. It would be difficult for them to wake up before Yang Chen finishes his task here.

Yang Chen was familiar beyond compare towards something like sneaking in without a sound. With his keen and developed senses and vigilantly observing all activity in the surroundings, he moved with very quick steps yet without a sound. His body seemed to have blended in with the night, dissipating into thin air.

As he had firmly memorized the detailed topography of the Chen Residence, Yang Chen was able to locate his target very quickly.

According to the words of the 7 people, Chen Feng was at his room at this moment, while the location of Chen Dehai could not be confirmed. If he wasn't in his study, then he should be in the living room.

Leaping over 2 balconies, then conveniently knocking 4 bodyguards unconscious without a sound, Yang Chen's monster-like body reached the third floor of the apartment building and was outside a big room. Right now the time was 10pm, yet the room remained as brightly lit as before.

The hovering tree shadow allowed Yang Chen to seem all the more blurry under the moonlight. When the cold wind blew onto the ceiling-to-floor windows' door, the curtain was slightly lifted, and the view beyond the transparent window entered Yang Chen's eyes.

Inside the huge bedroom with extravagant decorations, there indeed was a familiar figure, Chen Feng.

However, the Chen Feng of this moment simply didn't notice that right outside the balcony's door stood an uninvited guest. Chen Feng had an evil and

disgusting face, and was in the middle of doing something that could cause the blood of normal people to boil.

On top of the huge bed in Chen Feng's room, was a pale-white female body that was bound in the shape of the word “大”. Both arms and legs were bound using black lacy ladies' stockings. The said material had great elasticity yet possessed incredible toughness, and there were blood marks on the woman's four limbs because the woman was strapped so tightly. The snow-white skin of the woman seemed to already have quite a number of purplish bruises, it appears that she had already been through and suffered some painful mistreatment before.

The woman's dyed hair was scattered disorderly and incomparably disheveled, because of her struggling and sweat. Her red face could be considered coquettish and her mouth was stuffed with a pair of panties. In this position the woman could only let out “Wu Wu” wails, unable to speak.

Looking at this woman receive such mistreatment, the first thing Yang Chen felt was familiarity, yet thinking about it a little more carefully, it was from the time when he met Lin Ruoxi in that small bar, she tried to seduce him. This was the woman who then called Baldy and his bunch of muscular guys over, and it appeared that she was the Baldy's sister. It's unexpected that Chen Feng got hold of her.

Obviously, Chen Feng didn't treat this pretty and flirtatious delinquent girl well. At that moment his whole body too wasn't covered by any article of clothing. He stood on the bed, and by his feet were all kinds of rubber products and sex toys. The small ones were bead-sized, while the big ones were bowl-sized, and those toys were covered in lubricants, causing even the bed sheets to also be wet.

Chen Feng's physique was a little skinny, and looked like he indulged too deeply into debauchery too often. In the middle of his naked lower body, that little brother already had his head pointed down, and totally couldn't lift up its spirits, shrinking like a little worm.

“Haha, haha..... You female pig..... Yell out! Cry out! You dared to find another man behind my back..... Let's see if I will torture you to death, or fuck you to

death!!” Chen Feng’s face of that moment revealed a warped and crazed expression. He yelled and scolded, while fiercely using his legs to kick the woman’s face, soft breasts and the wet spot between her legs!

“To play with you is me thinking highly of you! Once I get hold of that girl with the surname Li tomorrow, I will throw you over to my brothers for them to fuck. Aren’t you on heat thinking of men? I alone cannot satisfy you, so those brothers of mine will take turns to get on top of you! Look at your foul smelling and pig-like appearance, you really think of yourself as I Chen Feng’s girlfriend? Why don’t you take a look at this swine face of yours, if it wasn’t for Young Master, I, being bored, who would play with you!” Chen Feng shouted while panting, as if he had been possessed by a demon, “You want to play, I will use my toes to penetrate you, and let you play!!”

The woman seemed to desire death because of both pain and shame, but her mouth had a pair urine-soaked panties stuffed in. She wanted to scream and weep, yet she kept retching from the disgusting odor, and her tears flowed onto the bed sheet. Because of the crying, her body trembled uncontrollably.

Seeing this delinquent girl about to be insulted to death, Yang Chen felt that this shouldn’t be, and perhaps this delinquent girl herself does not deserve sympathy, but it seemed that someone like Chen Feng appears to deserve a much earlier death.

Right as Chen Feng picked up a black whip from the bed, and was about to fiercely swing it, the glass door behind him was suddenly pulled open with a “Peng” sound!

“WHO!?” Chen Feng turned his body in horror, and when he saw the silhouette of a human on the balcony door, he was so badly frightened that he nearly peed!

“What, it’s only been a few days since we last met, and you can’t recognize me?” the edges of Yang Chen’s lips raised up, then he fished out a cigarette from his pocket, and unhurriedly lit it up.

In this room, the hormone odor was too strong, and there was also a strong Gucci male cologne smell. The two types of contrasting smells blended together, and was abnormally nose-stinging. Once he realized that the secretion’s smell was brought forth from this male and female pair, Yang Chen felt that breathing

in a breath of smoke was more comfortable.

Chen Feng's brain lagged for a moment, then he shivered and held the whip in a defensive position, then cautiously retreated while asking, "Yang..... Yang Chen? How can you be here!?"

When the woman fixed onto the bed saw Yang Chen, she also stopped weeping, as she also recognized this man. That day he made her pretty angry, and in the end she wasn't able to get her brother to take revenge on this man.

If the woman held Yang Chen in extreme disgust before, then his sudden appearance now let this woman feel that Yang Chen was basically the messiah!

Yang Chen glanced at Chen Feng's little worm with a mocking expression, then laughed and said, "Little brat, previously at the market I seem to have already mentioned, that I as a person hates being threatened the most."

"You..... I didn't threaten you!"

"You threatened Old Li's family, and they are my friends, which is tantamount to threatening me."

A sinister look flashed across Chen Feng's eyes, he then coldly smiled and said, "Yang Chen, you think you can leave after you've entered!? I only need to shout out loud once, and my dad's henchmen could shoot and turn you into a beehive!"

"You can give it a try." Yang Chen held the cigarette in mouth, and slowly walked towards Chen Feng.

"Heh, you also like that Li Jingjing? You want to be a hero saving the beauty, dream on! I will definitely grab hold of that Li Jingjing, get her pregnant, then give her to my henchmen to take turns!" Chen Feng shouted, then immediately pulled open the room's door behind him, attempting to escape the room!

But Yang Chen's figure crossed over a distance of over 5 metres in a flash, and his reinforced steel-like hand fiercely closed the door, then ruthlessly slapped Chen Feng in the face!

Chen Feng was knocked silly. How did Yang Chen suddenly appear by his side? Half of his face turned red and swollen in an instant, and was incredibly painful.

In a panic and at a loss, he dodged to a corner, pointed at Yang Chen and shouted, “Don’t come closer! My..... My dad’s men are almost here! They will kill you!!”

Yang Chen directly spit a mouthful of saliva and the cigarette butt onto Chen Feng’s face, expressionlessly walked in front of him, and looked down upon him from high up. This led Chen Feng to shrink like a hedgehog, without the guts to raise his head.

“Originally I planned to let you enjoy a straightforward death, however the words you said changed my mind, you seem to enjoy playing with women a lot, then I will first let you be unable to play with women.....”

The moment those words were spoken, a forceful kick was abruptly sent, landing on the small piece of meat between Chen Feng’s legs.....

“OWW!!!.....”

Chen Feng’s wails were just like the midnight howls of a wolf; so mournful and sharp that it tore apart the whole apartment building’s tranquility.

Chapter 38: Ruined Door

Seeing Chen Feng faint and curl up like a fetus, and the indistinct pile of flesh on his lower half, Yang Chen then stopped, eyes turning to the side to look at the delinquent girl whose face was pale from fright. He once again revealed a harmless and warm smile, "Don't be afraid, I'm not here to kill you."

Laughing, Yang Chen almost made the delinquent girl, who nearly fainted from fright, lose control of her bladder.

"I beg...I beg of you to spare me..." She couldn't find any other words to say.

"Don't be afraid, I already said I wouldn't kill you." Yang Chen knitted his brows as he asked, "Being the case that you have had some relations with Chen Feng, do you know where Chen Dehai currently is?"

Only after seeing that Yang Chen truly would not kill her did the delinquent girl calm down. With a small voice, she answered, "I.....I am not too sure, usually Master Chen would be in the study on the top floor."

"Ahh... it seems like those idiots did not lie to me." Yang Chen mumbled to himself as he started walking out the door.

Seeing this, the delinquent girl asked in surprise, "You aren't fleeing?"

"Fleeing? Why?" Yang Chen answered back.

"Those sounds from a moment ago probably alerted the thugs who will charge up here soon!", the delinquent anxiously said, even though she was still bound by the stockings.

Yang Chen indifferently laughed, "It would be best if Chen Dehai personally came here." Upon finishing, he left, closing the door on the way.

According to his memory, Chen Dehai's study was located in the center of the top floor, which was also the middle zone of the 4th-storey. After Yang Chen entered the hallway, he directly walked towards the staircase.

Sure enough, after walking a few steps, quite a number of people came

charging in front of the stairs, all of them wearing the same black attire of the henchmen at the door. However, there were weapons already in their hands ranging from tasers to brass knuckles.

Yang Chen wouldn't be so naive to believe that the men under Chen Dehai wouldn't carry guns, but after all, being in China, the government's control on firearms could be considered one of the strictest in the world. It wasn't possible for every man under him to be armed with a gun so only a few of his elite men would be carrying them.

Towards these useless soldiers in front of him, Yang Chen did not bother to just kick them down the stairs. After all, he has not fought for a long time, and seeing 20-30 men charging up to him, he felt rather cheery.

As the enraged henchmen attempted to beat up the leisurely idling youngster, they quickly found out that they simply could not grab hold of the target!

Yang Chen's footwork was as quick as lightning, with every movement like it came from a movie's special effects—an afterimage.

With what seemed to be a simple movement, Yang Chen's body perfectly passed by more than 10 men while under attack from all sides. Every time he momentarily paused, a hand would grab onto one of the henchmen's weapon holding hand, then forcibly utilize that henchman's hands to beat up the colleague closest to him. The lucky ones were hit on the arms and legs, while the unlucky ones had a rod directly smashed onto their heads!

With no specific order or pattern, entirely based on high-speed movements, precise calculations, it was a simple and effective tactic that was not the slightest bit sloppy!

With a 20-30 square metres sized corridor turn into a total mess, everyone present could only see a black figure appearing back and forth, and simply didn't have the guts to swing the stun rods in their hands at him. Because if they make a mistake they might end up crippling the people of their own side.

Blood-curdling screams sounded off in quick succession in the corridor, and in less than a minute, among the 30 and more henchmen that rushed over, only a mere 4 or 5 were left, hiding in the corner in fear. Everybody else sprawled on the ground in pain, too afraid to stand back up.

Yang Chen clapped his hands, and with an expression of a smile yet not a smile, he looked towards the 5 henchmen that did not dare to come forward, “Aren’t you guys coming over to play?”

The 5 men hurriedly shook their heads, and tried currying favor by revealing smiles that were uglier than cries.

*

After going up to the 4th-storey without anymore obstructions, Yang Chen easily located at the center the entrance of the study, the door was actually a reinforced steel door. If nothing unexpected happens, this could also block bullets.

Yang Chen glanced at the hallway’s surveillance camera, and showed a somewhat bored smile.

Chen Dehai was indeed an old fox, he had long known that I have entered the apartment building, yet he didn’t rush to get rid of me, and instead dispatched 30 and more henchmen to first test and wear me down. Right now as he hides in this steel box of a room, it can be assumed that an inescapable trap has already been laid inside.

To be honest, if it wasn’t me, this maneuver of his is correct, but he definitely doesn’t know my true strength, otherwise he would have made the wise decision of fleeing long ago.

The steel plated door in front of him looked as if it was indestructible, but Yang Chen didn’t let it weigh on his heart.

If it were me from two years ago, perhaps more effort would need to be spent to forcibly open it. But today’s me, with the transformation by the strange martial arts I learned, a fortification such as this is no longer a big deal.

Taking in a deep breath, Yang Chen’s leg moved like lightning as it directly kicked onto the thick steel plated door!

“Bam!”

After an immense slamming sound went off in the corridor, the steel door that was directly kicked caved in. The wall, made of marble, was shocked to the point

that cracks appeared, with fragmented crumbs falling onto the ground!

Yang Chen withdrew his leg with satisfaction, walked up to the door, and lightly pushed.....

“Boom!!!”

A cloud of dust rose, the steel door fell into the room, it was actually forcibly opened just like this!

Inside the brightly lit study room in front, there were as expected more than a few people standing.

“Little brother has great skills.” An unswervingly calm yet gloomy and hoarse voice sounded, it came from the man that sat behind a large oakwood table in the study.

Yang Chen only needed a moment to recognize that this man was Chen Dehai, because other than the man’s ash-gray hair, the shape and appearance of his face were very similar to his son, Chen Feng. His physique wasn’t tall or big, but he had a scheming and seasoned appearance.

Behind Chen Dehai, stood a line of more than 10 bodyguards in suits, at that moment every single one of them had serious expressions, with their hand in their jackets, evidently prepared to take a life by drawing out something like a pistol.

What made Yang Chen a little surprised was, the man standing closest to Chen Dehai was the robust Baldy he came across in the bar that one time. At this moment he was already one of Chen Dehai’s most trusted henchmen, closely protecting Chen Dehai’s safety.

When the Baldy saw Yang Chen, he too felt fright and disbelief, but did not display it.

“I’m sorry, I ruined your door.” Yang Chen smiled with the corners of his mouth raised up, and took his time, slowly walking into the study.

Chen Dehai’s smiled with his skin but not his flesh as he said, “Not a big deal, if the old don’t leave the new can’t enter, it doesn’t matter that the door broke if someone compensates for it.”

“What if I don’t compensate?”

“Then would little brother please tell me why you came to my apartment building, then I will make my decision.” Chen Dehai seemingly withered and skinny hand slammed onto the office table, calmed and composed he said, “I, Chen Dehai have stayed in Zhong Hai’s underworld for twenty, thirty years, and I’m not the type that doesn’t speak reason. Little brother has extraordinary skills, if possible I would like us to be friends instead of enemies.”

Yang Chen indifferently nodded, and glanced at his surroundings. In Chen Dehai’s study, large bookshelves filled the four walls, all kinds of collectibles, domestic and international publications included. On top of a small case, there were even the four treasures of the study, it was actually used for calligraphy.

“Looks like you’ve read quite a number of books, and have pretty good education.” Yang Chen replied with a totally irrelevant answer.

Chen Dehai creased his eyebrows, “Even those who enter the underworld, cannot completely rely on bravery to succeed in this generation.” He did not seem to understand what Yang Chen was trying to say with those words.

Yang Chen, with a profound look nodded, “I’m trying to say, if your son Chen Feng had half your intelligence, then you wouldn’t need to die today.” Said Yang Chen with a brilliant smile.

Chapter 39: Two Choices

Chen Dehai's initially unflustered face finally began to turn grave, as if his forehead had a bunch of black clouds hidden inside that could send out a thunderclap anytime.

"What about my son, does Feng-er have a grudge with you?"

Yang Chen shook his head, "Explaining is too troublesome. To be brief, without him you could still be alive for quite a number of days."

"Little brother, you don't seem to understand your current predicament."

"Oh?" Yang Chen at this moment had already walked until he was 5 or 6 metres away from the office desk. He stopped his footsteps, smiled and asked, "What predicament?"

Chen Dehai clapped his hands, and more than 10 black-clothed bodyguards neatly pulled out a locally made Type 80 automatic pistol, and in a flash, a row of black muzzles accurately pointed towards Yang Chen collectively.

It was not difficult to imagine, that within less than half a second, if everybody's finger simultaneously pulled the trigger, Yang Chen's body would have tens of holes of blood!

"You indeed can fight." Chen Dehai leisurely and contentedly fiddled with the green jade ring on his right thumb, and unhurriedly said, "Originally I was still planning to let you be my hired thug, and have you work for me. However, you are unable to adapt to current circumstances. Little brother..... You can't possibly have assumed that my henchman don't even have guns right?"

"Do you think you're very smart?" Yang Chen couldn't help but laugh.

A sinister look was revealed in Chen Dehai's eyes, "At least I'm not stupid enough to single-handedly go against more than 10 at gunpoint."

"What if I really dare to go against them?" Yang Chen curiously asked.

Somewhat irritated, Chen Dehai slapped down on the desk, "I'm not going to

“speak nonsense with you! Let me tell you, you have *two choices*. The first choice, is to clearly explain the whole story of this affair; why you appeared here on this night, and I will punish you as I see fit. The second choice, you eat my henchmen’s bullets, and experience it.....”

“I’m also giving you people *two choices*.” Yang Chen smiled as he swiped a glance at the row of bodyguards holding guns, and said, “The first choice, you people point your muzzles at this old fella, and I will leave you with your life. The second choice, you people, must all die.....”

“Looks like there’s nothing left to be spoken.....”

Chen Dehai’s rage had already reached its peak, and he was right about to clench his teeth and give the order to shoot, yet suddenly he felt a cool sensation on the back of his head!

“Tiger! You!!?”

At a time of life and death, Chen Dehai suddenly felt at the back of his head an ice-cold object pressing onto him, without even thinking he knew, that it was a muzzle!

It appears that the baldy who was originally standing behind Chen Dehai had now moved his muzzle, and pointed at Chen Dehai himself, with a resolute face.

“Tiger..... What is the meaning of this.....” Both of Chen Dehai’s hands grabbed onto the leather armrests, his knuckles turning white, evidently being angered to the extreme.

Baldy’s eyes were bright, with a menacing air he said, “There’s no other meaning..... I want to live, therefore, I choose the first choice he proposed.....”

“Haha!!” Chen Dehai turned from extreme anger into a smile, “Are you mad! You think if you kill me, the other, more than 10 men wielding guns can’t get rid of the 2 of you!?”

Baldy’s eyes squinted into a thin line, and deeply said, “I will just bet, bet that everything he says is true.”

Engrossed in watching this dramatic scene Yang Chen thought of something, then said to Baldy, “Baldy, if you open fire and get rid of your boss, I will assure

that you will not die.”

At this moment Chen Dehai’s other bodyguards returned to their senses. Straightaway, 2 of the bodyguards’ guns pointed at Baldy’s head, and could shoot Baldy up anytime.

Chen Dehai widened his eyes in anger, cruelly laughed and said, “Tiger..... You followed me for so many years, and I never thought that you would choose such a stupid time to betray me. If you put down the gun right now we could still work something out. Otherwise, the moment you pull the trigger, both of us will die!”

Baldy lifted his eyes to look at Yang Chen, seeing Yang Chen’s expression of watching a play, Baldy’s face first revealed an expression hardship, then once again turned bright with vitality, full of determination!

“Boss Chen, let me send you out!!!”

“You!.....”

“Bam,Bam,Bam!!!”

In a flash a line of gunfire sounded inside the study, the violent explosion sound shook the entire apartment building!

The fiery-hot bullet shot out from the gun, with a red streak of light, in the study’s narrow space, smashed up many books and chinaware, and was like a fierce knife tip tearing through the space!

But right at this time when nobody could react, Yang Chen’s figure, like an immaterial phantom, moved from the spot 5 metres away to Baldy’s side, knocking the two gun muzzles that were pointed at Baldy to point towards the ceiling!

At the same time as when Baldy pulled the trigger, the two bodyguards with guns, who should have taken his life, suddenly shot towards the skies!

Right after the 1st bullet sounded off, the other 10 and over gunman were appalled to discover, the target they wanted to take care of was unexpectedly behind them!

At that moment, everybody present had no idea how Yang Chen moved towards the 2 closest gunmen and took hold of their type 80 pistols. It was like

the pistol had grown eyes, accurately pointing at the surrounding people!

“Bam Bam Bam.....”

After a string of gunfire sounds, the bodyguards who numbered over 10, who wanted to turn around and shoot, fell to the ground. The spot that was hit by the bullets for every single one of them was identical; it was at their temple!

Everything happened too quickly, as if this was a movie scene sped up, with the part in the middle impossible to see clearly, and confusing to the eyes.

Baldy felt that 1 second after he pulled the trigger, the scenery surrounding him was thoroughly transformed. The ones that were standing all fell, yet the ones who should have fallen, were all standing!

A drop of cold sweat slid down his cheek, Baldy turned around in a daze, looking towards Yang Chen who stood at a side with a relaxed smile. Baldy swallowed his saliva, he could only feel that his heart had already stopped beating, he felt like he was in a dream. This man in front of him, just what kind of miracle did he pull off!?

As if only something insignificant was done, Yang Chen tossed the pistols in his hands to the side, kicked the dead with eyes open body of Chen Dehai onto the ground, pulled over a chair, and nonchalantly sat down.

“What’s your name?” Yang Chen warmly smiled and asked.

Baldy abruptly returned to his senses, and immediately retreated to a side, crouched onto the ground, which sincerely created a feeling of worship. With a trembling voice he said, “I..... I’m called Zhang Hu, those of the underworld call me Tiger.”

“How many years have you been following Chen Dehai?”

“8 years.....” Tiger was finally breathing normally, and carefully answered.

“Then you should be considered to be an elder among his henchmen, why were you so trusting of me, believing that I could procure victory in that situation earlier?”

Zhang Hu hummed deeply, and lifted his head, with traces of loathing appearing on his face, “I handed my life over to Chen Dehai, helped him to kill

others, helped him to attain territory. But Chen Dehai's bastard of a son, drugged and raped my one and only blood-related sister..... Also..... Also, he treated my sister like a bitch..... Chen Dehai said he would give my sister a good home, and I originally believed him, but Chen Feng simply isn't human! He..... He basically didn't see my sister as a human being. He toys with her when he feels like it, then throws her to the side once he's bored!"

"In the past my sister was merely an incomparably pure high schooler, but now..... But now everything has changed..... This father and son ruined my only relative..... I..... I've long wanted to get rid of them!" With that said, Zhang Hu's pair of tiger eyes were red, and two lines of bean sized tears flowed out.

§

Chapter 40: Cooperate With The Investigation

“Why’s a grown man like you crying?” Yang Chen couldn’t help but sigh, he witnessed firsthand, and naturally knew Zhang Hu was grieving over what happened to his sister. These words weren’t fake, and if it was any ordinary person, they wouldn’t have chosen to openly betray during such an extreme situation like earlier.

Zhang Hu abruptly raised his head, swiped away the tears, and sincerely said, “Boss, from now on, my Zhang Hu’s life is yours. I will not regret it even if I have to work like an ox or a horse!”

Yang Chen couldn’t help but laugh, and then said, “You’re so straightforward at changing bosses. How do you know I want to be your underworld boss, how do you know I am willing to be your boss?”

“This..... This.....” Zhang Hu couldn’t get another word out, then shamelessly said, “Other than fighting, killing and seizing territories there’s nothing that I, Zhang Hu knows how to do. If Boss has no objection, please let me be Boss’ bodyguard!”

“Do you think I need that?”

“Erm.....” Zhang Hu’s face instantly turned pale, he once again thought of Yang Chen’s frightful movements. He could only lower his head, and softly say, “You don’t need it.”

Seeing this deflated expression, Yang Chen had begun to like this straightforward burly man. Most importantly, this Baldy was daring yet careful, and knew when to take a step back. That time at the bar, he noticed that Yang Chen’s combat skills were abnormal, and then he prudently apologised with gifts immediately, and never got rash or got into a daze. This time, for his sister, his real nature was revealed, resolutely choosing to believe Yang Chen, and brought on a heroic life and death bet.

Thinking for a bit, Yang Chen stood up, and said to Zhang Hu, “Zhang Hu, although I will not take over matters regarding the underworld, that doesn’t

mean I wouldn't let others take over."

"Boss..... What do you mean?" Zhang Hu felt a glimmer of hope, and immediately raised his head to ask.

Yang Chen slowly walked the room, and then said, "The moment Chen Dehai is gone, this area's underworld will turn into a huge mess. I need you to take over Chen Dehai's position."

Troubled, Zhang Hu said, "Boss, to take over the old ghost's territory isn't difficult. Right now that old ghost's most important henchmen were all shot dead by Boss, with your godly marksmanship, and I'm the only one left. These few years my reputation in the society has been pretty good, so if I use some cold-hearted tactics, those brothers willing to follow me will definitely be able to keep this territory under control. But..... But I don't know how to manage it, the underworld also have businesses, and these businesses were personally managed by the old ghost in the past, so I don't understand those."

"You don't need to worry about this." Yang Chen smiled and said, "You only need to stabilize this area, and not let Chen Dehai's forces scatter, but keep it firmly in your grasp. As for other matters, I will have someone tell you what to do."

"Someone?" Zhang Hu uncertainly asked, "Not managed by you, Boss?"

"There's someone more suitable to take over than me, and in the future you will handle matters according to what that person says. Don't question anything unnecessarily. As for the West Union Society's side, as far as possible, you should try to replace Chen Dehai's position, and follow along with West Union Society's decisions as before."

Without waiting for Zhang Hu to say more, Yang Chen took a piece of paper, wrote down his cellphone number, and passed it to Zhang Hu, "Here, this is my cellphone number. My surname is Yang, and in the future don't call me boss. I'm not Chen Dehai, and I don't want you to be my henchman."

Zhang Hu hurriedly took it, firmly held it in his hand, and revealed a candid smile, "Yes, Boss..... Oh no, Mr. Yang."

Yang Chen nodded in satisfaction, "About what comes after, you make the

decisions yourself. I will have someone contact you directly, and help you manage this area's forces. If you run into an obstacle you cannot resolve, you can give me a call, I will get rid of it at my own discretion. If there's nothing particularly important, then don't call this number."

Zhang Hu listened with a serious face, and did not dare to have the slightest bit of disobedience.

Yang Chen glanced at the clock on the wall, this "business trip" took almost 2 hours, it was nearly midnight, remembering what he promised to Rose, a fervent feeling rose in his heart, then he said to Zhang Hu, "It's pretty late, I should get going. Your sister might still be in Chen Feng's room right now, and Chen Feng was knocked unconscious by me, but I reckon he isn't dead. I recommend you hand over Chen Feng to your sister to handle, just think of it as 'reversal of the wheel of fortune'."

Hearing the two words "Chen Feng" Zhang Hu's eyes radiated coldness, then he seriously nodded, "Mr. Yang, my sister and I both express gratitude to your kindness for the new lease on our lives. In the future if there's anything that you need I, Zhang Hu, to do, just send the word, and I will not decline even if it's jumping into a mountain of knives or a sea of fire.

"If you have no education, bootlick less, you make it sound as corny as a dialogue from the 80's ancient TV dramas." Yang Chen did not know whether to laugh or to cry as he tapped Zhang Hu's shoulder, then directly left the study room.

Since Chen Residence was already a mess, Yang Chen who fought his way in basically didn't get obstructed at all. He left the main entrance relaxed and satisfied, then walked in the direction of the parking lot.

But before he managed to even walk a mile, Yang Chen was startled to realize, that at the side of the dark public park's forest ahead, there were 3 police cars parked, moreover there stood quite a number of policemen.

Yang Chen wasn't stupid enough to think that Chen Dehai called the police. Isn't that a mouse calling a cat for help? Furthermore, these policemen seemed to be waiting to ambush, as for what they were taking the initiative to do, it must be some other mission, and only a coincidence that it was held at this area.

Pondering for a while, Yang Chen decided to just take care of his own business, leave and pretend he didn't see these policemen.

But only a mere few steps were taken, when he heard someone shout at him from behind.....

“Stop!”

The melodious female voice was somewhat familiar. Yang Chen turned around, saw the person walking over, and couldn't help but expose a playful smile, “Oh, it's Bureau Chief Cai, it's so late yet we still bump into each other, fate huh?”

The policewoman who walked up was precisely the one he once met from that time, Cai Yan. Cai Yan who walked closer in the wind of the night wore a dark green police uniform, her sharply contoured face outline had a heroic air that normal women didn't possess. With face powder, eyeliner and light pink lipstick, this policewoman full of confidence had a more lady-like charm, while her outstandingly good figure was like a blooming tuberose.

Cai Yan looked at Yang Chen with a suspecting gaze, “What are you doing here?”

“This.....” Yang Chen rubbed his hands in a somewhat embarrassed manner, laughed and said, “About this, it's considered a private matter, can I not say?”

Cai Yan looked at the happy and giggling man with disgust, but didn't let down her guard. She remembered the time he overthrew two of her civil police subordinates, and expressionlessly said, “A police asked you a question, so you better answer truthfully, this is to *cooperate with the investigation*.”

Yang Chen leisurely said, “Bureau Chief Cai, it actually was nothing big. I was just at the riverside with a female friend kissing her little lips. I rubbed her boobs, took off her skirt then pinched her thighs. If there was something more to say, then it would be that I also let her grab that part of mine..... You have no idea, she has a heavy hand. The point is she was too excited, and said that part of mine was bigger than any other men she had ever touched, at that time I was so happy, then.....”

Hearing such words, Cai Yan's face and ears immediately turned red, she clenched her teeth and said, “Shut up! You're not allowed to say more!”

Why is this man so shameless! Cai Yan felt like puking.

With a straight face, Yang Chen said, “Bureau Chief Cai, you wanted me to cooperate with the investigation, I even let out such a private matter to you. But this attitude of yours is such a letdown to me, a kind-hearted little civilian willing to help the police, right?”

Cai Yan truly felt like going up to Yang Chen to give him a slap, but remembering that she still had official business, she endured her anger, thought of the “wise and virtuous women can wait 10 years for revenge” principle, waved her little hand, and said, “You can get lost. hurry up and leave this place!”

Chapter 41: Looking Back With A Smile Brings A Hundred Times The Charm

[Mildly wet NSFW](#)

After using some vulgar tactics to get rid of Cai Yan, the troublesome police flower, Yang Chen arrived at the parking area without a hitch, he started the car and looked at the time on the dashboard. It was almost 1AM. Afraid of not having enough time to do intimate things with Rose, he fiercely stepped on the accelerator, and the M3 shot towards the heart of the city like a rocket!

At the same time, the 3 divisions of police cars led by Cai Yan felt that something wasn't right.....

After a policeman picked up a phone call, he hurriedly ran to Cai Yan who was deep in thought, "Bureau Chief, something big happened!"

Cai Yan was gloomy about how the criminal they were waiting for was not found yet, and turned around in a bad mood, "What happened?" she asked.

The policeman quickly said, "We just received an insider's report. A mysterious person intruded the Chen Residence alone tonight, then killed Chen Dehai and a large number of his subordinates. The Chen Residence has now changed its master, and it is one of the late Chen Dehai's assistants, Zhang Hu. That mysterious person's whereabouts is unknown."

Cai Yan's dense and fine eyebrows creased, her heart full of astonishment, "No wonder Chen Dehai still hasn't left to participate in tonight's drug deal, he has actually died....."

The other policemen were quite happy and one said, "Bureau Chief, this is a good thing, it's about time that Chen Dehai received the retribution he deserves."

"What do you guys know?" Cai Yan felt angry and berated, "Why don't you guys think about it, what kind of person is able to single-handedly intrude the Chen Residences, kill Chen Dehai, then withdraw alone? Someone like that

appeared in Zhong Hai, are you guys not the slightest bit worried!?”

All the policemen looked at each other in dismay. Someone like that was truly more scary than Chen Dehai!

Cai Yan pondered for a moment and said, “Hurry up and contact the insider, investigate the cause of the story as much as possible. It would be best to find out who this mysterious person is, and at the very least we must find out his appearance and characteristics. Also, the surveillance in this area must not slacken just because Chen Dehai is dead. Since Chen Dehai died, Zhang Hu, who succeeded his position, will definitely need to purge the old stubborn ones by blood. We must make sure that there will be no civilian casualties!”

“Yes! Bureau Chief!”

After giving out a series of commands, Cai Yan glanced towards the direction Yang Chen left, her cold and beautiful face revealed a little stubbornness, and she mumbled to herself, “Yang Chen, I will definitely find out your bottom line.....”

*

When he arrived at ROSE bar, human voices still emanated from within. Being able to drink wine and have fun from night till dawn was to be expected of Bar Street.

Yang Chen called out to the happy and giggling Little Zhao, then urgently ran into the hallway at the back of the bar, and on the path, all the bodyguards respectfully greeted him. Although Yang Chen didn’t mention it, everybody was long aware that the life of their president was saved by this man who seemed ordinary.

After pushing open the beautiful door to Rose’s room, Yang Chen did not find her in the room. Inside the spacious and cozy room, only the side table’s light was switched on, the illumination in the room was dusky.

Turning his head, he discovered that a seductive figure was sitting by the swimming pool outside the room.

Rose’s swimming pool was formed by using large pieces of cobblestone. At that moment Rose wore a white cotton gauze nightgown, and sat on the

cobblestone by the swimming pool. A pair of pure white, flawless, smooth and exquisite little feet full of luster, created ripples to the mirror image of the starlight in the water.

In the quiet courtyard, several Yulan Magnolia flowers swayed with the wind on the tree branches, bringing with it threads of cool and natural fragrance.

Among the clouds a shy smile was shown by the crescent moon, shooting its plain and tranquil moonlight onto Rose's charming yet slightly indifferent pretty face. The moonlight also added some innocence to her, as if she was Chang'e who fell from the palace in the moon to the secular world, yet also like a goddess in a white dress from ancient greek mythology.

[TL: Chang'e is the moon goddess in Chinese mythology.]

Hearing the sound of the door opening, Rose slowly turned her head over. She did not open her mouth to speak, and only revealed a peaceful smile to Yang Chen.

There's an ancient saying "Looking back with a smile brings a hundred times the charm, while the ladies of the three palaces are all colorless" describing a fox spirit of a concubine like Daji. Yang Chen didn't find Rose to be like Daji, because right now her smile was even purer, as if she was a wife who had missed her husband, and seeing that her husband returned home safely, she revealed a happy smile.

[TL: The original poem is from the Tang Dynasty period about a concubine named Yang Guifei, One of the four great beauties of ancient China, original poem has six palaces instead of three. Daji is unrelated to the poem, calling out the author for his mistake! Daji is the favourite concubine of a king during the Shang Dynasty, often portrayed as a wicked fox spirit.]

This woman is always able to give me warmth and comfort on a spiritual level. Only today did I finally discover that I'm truly unable to leave her.

Stripping off his socks and pants, Yang Chen slowly walked to Rose, sat on the cobblestone by her side, dipped his legs into the cool water, and exhaled deeply. Thereafter he felt his whole body loosen up comfortably.

Only now did Rose open her mouth, and with a slightly mischievous smile she

said, "If you still didn't come, I would've gone to sleep."

"If you were asleep I could still wake you up, and if you slept when I asked you to wait for me, then I would also have to spank that butt of yours." Yang Chen grabbed onto Rose's soft and fragrant shoulders, allowing her to comfortably lean on his chest. He conveniently rubbed onto the soft flesh on her chest, provoking the beautiful woman to pout coquettishly.

"You're such a tyrant," Rose winked, "Red Thorn Society's president getting spanked on the butt by a man; if this gets out, how am I going to command my subordinates, my many brothers and sisters?"

"Then we have to see who is the one spanking....." Yang Chen kissed Rose's fragrant hair, it smelled great, so he smiled and asked, "You changed your perfume?"

"Who would spray perfume on their heads?" Rose straightened her body, and rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, "Do you like this young lady's body fragrance and shampoo's fragrance mixed together?"

Yang Chen vaguely smiled and said, "I do like it, but you were slightly wrong on one point, you're no longer a young lady."

Rose's pretty face turned red, "Then what am I?"

"Considered a young married woman."

"A young married woman who is not married?" Rose playfully blinked her eyes.

Yang Chen was instantly speechless, this was considered his guilt towards Rose, and something that was difficult to talk about. He smiled and said embarrassed, "This..... Rose my darling, can we change topics?"

"Look at your expression," Rose chuckled then said, "I'm just teasing you for fun, it's your fault for making me wait so long, it has been nearly 4 hours."

Yang Chen gloomily said, "Hey, my darling Rose, I went from my house to Chen Dehai's house, then came here as soon as I was done. The route was simple, but I didn't stop by my home in between, I'm already pretty quick."

"What was the result?" Rose asked in a relaxed manner, as if slaughtering an underworld boss in his stronghold was a trivial matter.

Yang Chen didn't waste anymore time, and made a simple narration of the events that took place, at the end he said, "In brief, right now Chen Dehai's forces will be cleaned up by that Zhang Hu. You will get in touch with Zhang Hu, and have him listen to your arrangements."

Rose nodded without the slightest bit of surprise, "I really didn't expect that Zhang Hu actually had some brains, in the past I saw him dim-wittedly following Chen Dehai's side, I didn't expect to err in my judgement."

"He is dim-witted, otherwise he wouldn't choose Chen Dehai as his boss." Yang Chen did not deny it.

Rose suddenly sighed with remorse, "No matter how silly he is, he cannot compare with me, who willingly allows myself to be a person's mistress, and even the type that waits deep into the night, until I'm about to sleep....."

Seeing this little vixen reveal a 'I'm pitiful' expression, Yang Chen could only feel a fire sprouting ferociously from his dantian. In one move he grabbed and hugged Rose's extremely flexible waist, then lowered his head to kiss her flawless face, and smiled, "My darling Rose, you're really good at increasing appeal, with such an expression aren't you scared your husband I will go crazy?"

"What kind of crazy, hubby?" Rose's exhaled air smelled like orchids, as she asked with a low coquettish voice.

Yang Chen gave a strange smile, and suddenly moved with force, their bodies entered the swimming pool in an instant!

The two immediately stuck together, and shared a hot kiss. Among the splashing waters, murmuring was heard from time to time.

"Rose, let's do it in the water....."

"Wu.....don't....."

"What? Okay? Oh, good, very obedient....."

"I said.....Wu....."

"I know you want it, saying it once is enough, hehe....."

"Wu.....Wu.....Wu!!!....."

Chapter 42: Breakfast Time

This

When the first light of dawn shined its way into Rose’s huge bedroom, Yang Chen got off the bed in great spirits, put on his clothes and prepared to leave.

Drowsy-eyed Rose pouted with dissatisfaction, and without a shred of charisma befitting an underworld boss, just like an ordinary girl, she spoke with remorse, “I told you not to do it in the water yesterday, now I feel water swollen(edema) down there.”

[TL: In chinese the characters for water and swollen put together means edema.] [Note: Edema – a condition characterized by an excess of watery fluid collecting in the cavities or tissues of the body]

Yang Chen looked conflicted, “Doing it in the water so it’s water swollen(edema). Darling Rose how can it be that you don’t have the slightest bit of common medical knowledge. That’s not what water swollen(edema) means.”

“I don’t care, you have no conscience.” Rose threw a pillow at Yang Chen.

Yang Chen laughed in embarrassment, and said, “It’s alright, when you practice more in the future you’ll gain resistance to it. Practice makes perfect, right?”

Rose made a spitting impression, and she didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry, “What practice makes perfect, utter nonsense. I really don’t know how I fell in love with a hoodlum like you whose mouth has no filter.”

After a brief moment of poking fun at one another, Yang Chen remembered that he still needed to return home to change clothes and go to work. So after rubbing Rose’s well developed butt, he left the bar in a hurry.

When he returned to the villa at Dragon Garden, it was precisely breakfast time, Wang Ma, who was wearing an apron was in the process of bringing breakfast out of the kitchen. Seeing that Yang Chen returned home, Wang Ma

was stunned for a moment, then revealed a caring expression as she asked, “Young Master, where did you go last night? Miss and I were worried.”

The moment Wang Ma said that, Lin Ruoxi who was eating congee by the table frowned, and coldly said, “I wasn’t worried.”

Upon seeing yet another cold expression, as if someone owed her money, Yang Chen did not mind. He sat down, picked up the ladle, filled his bowl with congee and happily ate it. The congee slid down smoothly, dragging with it a taste of coriander.

“Wang Ma, how do you make it so delicious even though it’s just congee!”

Wang Ma happily laughed and said, “If Young Master likes it please eat more.” She then returned to the kitchen to do her chores.

After finishing the whole bowl of congee with two big gulps, Yang Chen moved to pick up the ladle intending to refill the bowl, but even before he picked up the ladle, he saw Lin Ruoxi swiftly shift the big pot of congee to her side, giving the impression of not letting him have another sip.

Yang Chen was hurt, he sourly laughed and said, “My good good wife Ruoxi, it can’t be that you aren’t even willing to let your husband eat congee in the morning right?”

“You’ve already ate two mouthfuls, also, you’re not allowed to call me in such a disgusting way.” Lin Ruoxi put the pot of congee by her side, then lowered her head and continued eating.

“Do you need to go that far for just a small bowl of congee……” muttered Yang Chen, then he suddenly thought of something, laughed and asked, “Ruoxi, could it be that you’re angry because I didn’t return home last night?”

Lin Ruoxi didn’t even raise her head as she coldly said, “I’m not interested in your trivial affairs.”

“Then why won’t you let me eat the congee!” Yang Chen was bewildered.

“Wang Ma cooked this for me, you settle your own food.”

Yang Chen hesitated for a while, and he felt that forcefully snatching the congee to eat would be excessive. Remembering that he promised all his female

colleagues that he would bring breakfast, he didn't continue teasing her.

Yang Chen went upstairs to change his clothes, then prepared to leave home.

When Wang Ma saw Yang Chen about to leave, she curiously asked, "Why not eat a little more, Young Master? There's still some steamed buns left."

"Oh, I have some things to take care of this morning, I'll just eat out." Yang Chen glanced at the large pot of coriander congee with reluctance, but still left in the end.

Wang Ma sighed, walked to Lin Ruoxi's side and heartfully said, "Miss, Young Master is a good person, the two of you, man and wife should live harmoniously, don't be so opposing of Young Master anymore."

Lin Ruoxi's hands stopped, and she plainly said, "Don't worry anymore Wang Ma, if he wants to eat out, then let him eat out, as he pleases."

"He's a man after all, and when they're young they're more playful. Miss if you just treat Young Master a little better, how can those women outside compare with Miss? When that happens, Young Master won't stay out for a whole night anymore." Wang Ma persuaded patiently.

It seemed as if Lin Ruoxi could listen no more, she stood up and put down the chopsticks, "Wang Ma, I'm full, I'm going to work."

Seeing how Lin Ruoxi was no longer willing to speak about it, Wang Ma knew the short-tempered Miss had grown impatient, and could only sigh. Then she began clearing the table.

The episode that morning did not affect Yang Chen's mood, he listened to the morning news while driving to west region's market. He parked nearby, then moved to where his lamb skewer stall used to be, and began purchasing various kinds of breakfast.

Those who worked as peddlers were naturally familiar with the many kinds of stalls for breakfast, quite a number of them were also friends with Yang Chen, so when they saw Yang Chen, they happily greeted him and also gave him extra food on top of what he ordered for free.

Very quickly, Yang Chen carried bags of food to the car, but it was a pity he

didn't see Old Li's stall, Old Li was most likely still unaware of last night's happenings.

Thinking of Old Li, Yang Chen felt the need to let Zhang Hu take note not to treat the little peddlers here unfairly. After all, during this half a year all of them had good relations with him.

Yang Chen managed to reach Yu Lei International without being late. When he left the elevator and entered the large Public Relations Department's office, immediately there were 2 well dressed and pretty female colleagues that welcomed him, happily laughing, "Why did big brother Yang only arrive now, us sisters have all been hungry." Apparently Zhao Hongyan did inform the others about Yang Chen taking up the responsibility of bringing breakfast.

Yang Chen raised the two large bags of food in his hands, "The amount of food needed is quite high, next time I'll go buy breakfast earlier."

While speaking, Yang Chen walked over to his own office desk, because his table only had a computer and nothing else, it was a suitable location to place the food.

The tens of youthful and attractive female colleagues in the office immediately crowded around chirping, and lively beyond compare. Seeing Yang Chen's table full of glittering foods like steamed stuffed buns, mandarin rolls, steamed buns, shaobing, youtiao, fried glutinous rice dough cakes, fried dumplings, and even soup-filled buns, they blanked out for a moment, then one by one turned towards Yang Chen with looks of adoration.

"Yang Chen, you're too amazing, how did you manage to buy so much, and still manage to avoid bringing the heavy types!" Round-faced Zhang Cai quickly grabbed a soup-filled bun, took a bite with that little mouth, and commended.

"It can't be that you're a specialist at buying breakfast right? So professional, how is it that there is both milk and soy milk, and the soy milk you bought even has sweetened and unsweetened types!? Zhao Hongyan also didn't expect Yang Chen to be so "professional". This was much more abundant than what they had before.

Seeing all his lady colleagues happily praising him, a certain person named Yang felt gratified and proud at the same time, totally forgetting that his original

job application was for PR, and not a breakfast gopher.

“Everybody, please eat whatever you like, if there’s something you particularly like please let me know, I’ll buy more of it the next time.” Yang Chen was proud of himself, and also didn’t forget to boast and flatter, “When doing something, we might as well do it seriously, satisfying the masses’ requirements in life, this sort of thing is something a person like me who has a great character happily does. To think of the time I was nearly able to put on the red neckscarf!”

[TL: He means that he nearly joined the Young Pioneers of China organization, it’s like a scout organization, china version. Probably a lie of course, like everything he says. lel]

Chapter 43: I Must Reward Myself Well

After Yang Chen's series of words brought forth laughter from the female colleagues again, without any semblance of a virtuous lady, one short-haired pretty girl who was holding a fried dumpling walked up to him and coyly said, "Big brother Yang, come closer, there's something I want to say to you."

Yang Chen moved closer to hear what she had to say, yet that pretty girl kissed his cheeks with a "muah," then with her face beet-red she smiled and said, "This is your reward!"

Like he was suddenly on cloud nine, Yang Chen felt that the world was great. Yu Lei International was indeed heaven for men. It was only his second day, yet there was already a pretty girl offering kisses. Just a single breakfast had such an effect, so if he brought breakfast everyday, would his life of "gender happiness" still be far away?

Yang Chen touched the moist kiss mark on his face, and laughed, "Little sister, that was insincere of you, there was still oil on your mouth when you kissed me, if I can't clean it off, you'll have to kiss the oil back."

The short-haired sister pretended to be angry as she said, "Hmph, calling you big brother is already very nice of me, among the sisters here who is younger than you? Don't gain an inch and ask for a mile."

"Hehe, just joking." Only now did Yang Chen remember he was only 23 this year. In Huaxia quite a number of university students graduated at 24. Indeed he could only be considered a little brother, and not big brother.

After the crowd of female colleagues grabbed what they liked, they happily returned to their seats and enjoyed the food while working, and from time to time several bold sisters would release electric eyes at Yang Chen, causing Yang Chen to feel like his saliva glands increased production by no small amount. He had no choice but to continuously stuff his mouth with the ladies' leftovers, raking in his breakfast with big gulps.

Right at this point of time, Yang Chen thought of something, turned his head

towards a corner, and saw his one and only male colleague in the office. The white and tender-looking brother Chen Bo was sitting there tapping onto his keyboard. Remembering that he did not seem to come take breakfast, Yang Chen picked up 2 steamed stuffed buns and walked over.

“Chen Bo, have you eaten breakfast?”

Chen Bo nervously turned his body, “No..... Not yet.”

“Then why didn’t you come to take your breakfast, didn’t you hear that from here on out I’m taking up the duty of providing breakfast?” Yang Chen smiled as he handed over the plastic bag to Chen Bo, “Here, if breakfast is not eaten one would not have enough energy to work so if you need to take more come over to my cubicle, there’s a lot left.”

Chen Bo accepted the food with gratitude, but only removed one steamed stuffed bun from the plastic bag, and returned the other to Yang Chen. He had an awkward expression as he murmured, “My.....My appetite is small, one is enough to fill me up.”

Yang Chen nearly choked. A man stood in front of Yang Chen and weakly said that he had a small appetite, and couldn’t even finish 2 steamed stuffed buns. It gave him the feeling of not knowing whether to laugh or to cry.

Returning to his seat, the moment he turned on the computer, he noticed Liu Mingyu who was in a light purple dress gracefully walking to his side. Today, on top of her lovely purplish-red hair dye there was a rose-colored hair clip. Among the ripe and elegance a little sauciness was added. As she approached, a smell that was similar to orchids and musk deers, lavender could be smelled.

With his experience, Yang Chen was able to determine that this woman could make all kinds of hardcore movements on the bed.

Liu Mingyu wouldn’t have thought such vile ideas were in Yang Chen’s mind, she carefully glanced at Chen Bo for a moment, then said, “Little Yang, in the future if you are free please take care of Little Chen more, that child usually speaks very little, and is pretty lonely. We have all been worried for him, but after all we are all ladies, and we can’t truly treat him as a sister.”

It appeared that Liu Mingyu had a good heart and showed care for her

colleagues in the office. Yang Chen naturally wouldn't mind a little errand such as this, and nodded, "Anyway, I'm just buying breakfast and doing little errands. Something like caring for my colleagues, and taking care of my fellow male is a must."

Liu Mingyu's pursed lips turned into a smile, "I heard others speak of how much of a great talent you are, but from how I see it you just have a slick tongue."

Zhao Hongyan, who sat the closest turned around, she gave Liu Mingyu a profound look, tenderly laughed and said, "Big sis Mingyu, why don't you ask Yang Chen if he has a girlfriend, I think the two of you are pretty compatible."

Yang Chen at that moment was staring right at the 2 lumps of vibrating meatballs on Liu Mingyu's chest without even blinking, and hearing those words, he couldn't help but have a regretful tone as he said, "About this.....have I never mentioned it? I'm already married."

"You're married!?" Zhao Hongyan was stunned, then followed with disbelief as she said, "I really can't tell, with your lecherous looks, and making moves without permission, a girl is actually willing to marry you."

Yang Chen was unhappy, and with a righteous and majestic face he said, "How have I been lecherous, I'm quite the upright person, big sis Hongyan you mustn't speak falsely."

"Earlier you kept staring at big sis Mingyu's boobs, do you think we didn't know?" Zhao Hongyan rolled her eyes.

Liu Mingyu also didn't feel awkward, she covered her mouth and laughed, "Hongyan you shouldn't poke at him anymore, if this spreads to his wife, perhaps he would have to kneel on a washboard to pay for his mistakes." With that said she magnanimously walked off.

In his heart Yang Chen muttered, so they're all a bunch of vixens, and could see everything. They just kept quiet about it. But since he had already been seen through, there was no need to be sneaky anymore. He stared at Liu Mingyu's rear view as she walked, and that gracefully swaying butt, while swallowing his saliva.

Zhao Hongyan was speechless towards Yang Chen's bluntness, then followed with a laugh and said, "Yang Chen, I want to tell you a secret....."

"What secret?" Yang Chen could tell that there was something indirectly implied from those words, and couldn't help but move closer to ask.

"Actually, big sis Mingyu's butt may be outstanding, but Zhang Cai's butt is the softest, it is very comfortable to touch, if you have the chance you should try it." Zhao Hongyan's coquettish eyes turned into slits as she said, "I've touched all of their butts before y'know?"

Yang Chen was incredibly envious. This woman was truly open and bold, perhaps it was because they've stayed in this place, Yu Lei International, where men are rare for far too long, and their natural hunger and thirst welled up. Revealing a playful smile, he asked, "Then how does your butt compare to Zhang Cai's?"

Zhao Hongyan originally intended to just tantalize Yang Chen, but suddenly being asked such a question, she stuttered and was unable to speak. If she said she was inferior to Zhang Cai, then as a woman who was confident in her looks, she would feel dissatisfied. But if she said she was superior to Zhang Cai, then she would seem too arrogant and complacent, and a flip flopper.

A pair of vivid eyes stared at Yang Chen, "Are you very curious? After you touch Zhang Cai's, I will let you touch mine, then you can just compare it yourself right?"

"It's a deal." Yang Chen laughed.

Pitiful Zhang Cai, she obviously doesn't know that her butt has turned into a gambling platform for this pair of heartless man and woman.

Zhao Hongyan wasn't shy about this either, with her eyebrows raised, she flirtatiously laughed, "If you have the ability to make all our sisters let you touch them once, that would be regarded as our PR Department's welfare for our rare male colleagues."

These words made Yang Chen's mood fantastic, and although in the last few years he had relationships with a number of ladies, but those were times of the past. When thinking about it now, it was also merely a vent for physical needs.

As of present, the excitement brought to him just by saying a few words to the ladies in the office was unprecedented.

During the morning, working was exactly as how Yang Chen envisioned. Nobody bothered him, he turned on the computer and went straight to the internet to play some games, like gold miner, Pokemon and such. He had great fun. Occasionally there would be several pretty girls coming over to ask him some foreign language questions, and Yang Chen managed to easily answer them quickly without any burden on his brain.

When it was nearly 12pm, Zhang Cai and Liu Mingyu walked over as a pair, and when Zhao Hongyan noticed them coming over, she tidied up her things and got up.

Zhang Cai saw the familiar “Concentration” game on the monitor, chuckled and said, “Yang Chen, big sis Hongyan said you came here to idle about, seems like she was spot-on.”

Yang Chen licked his dry lips, rubbed his stomach, and then raised his head to ask, “Are you guys about to go for lunch?”

“Yep, right at the company’s dining hall, are you coming with us?” Liu Mingyu asked.

Yang Chen may have devoured 7 or 8 steamed stuffed buns, 5 sticks of youtiao and 2 packs of soy milk, but doing something with high difficulty like playing games was the most tiring thing, so he was still a little hungry. He stood up, and without the slightest bit of shame he said, “Of course, I have to go with you. Working is so exhausting, *I must reward myself well.*”

The 3 ladies immediately rolled their eyes at him at the same time.

Chapter 44: Three

Yu Lei International indeed proved itself to be a company run by women. The interior decorations for the dining hall which encompasses the whole 15th-storey, were clean, bright, open, and delightfully colored.

Large floor-to-ceiling glass windows were present on all four sides, and one could gaze upon the entire landscape of Zhong Hai City. The tables and chairs were all avant-garde silver-white colored mix of metal and plastic, showing a strong fashionable style. The lighting of the dining hall was also elegant and fresh, the hanging lights with glass that had a crystal-like texture came in various colors and types. In the hall, potted plants were sparsely distributed at the four corners, their tender and lovely leaves showed that someone had been showing great care to them.

At the counter for swiping their IDs, the table used was similar to those used in bars. The food and beverage workers wore clean and white work clothing, and welcomed everybody with smiles.

When Yang Chen entered the dining hall with the 3 ladies, not much attention was brought onto them. After all, despite Yu Lei International having comparatively lesser men, that did not mean they didn't have any, it was only the PR Department which was a little special. On top of that, there were over 200 workers in the headquarters, when all were assembled onto this level, men wouldn't be so eye-catching.

Seeing Yang Chen's expression of interest, Zhang Cai laughed and said, "What do you think, it's not bad right? Our company's welfare is considered one of the very best in the entire Zhong Hai."

"The design of this place is great, I felt my appetite rise the moment I entered." Yang Chen spoke honestly.

"The dining hall's renovation was personally designed by our CEO. In these 2 years that our CEO has been on the job, the company's performance and welfare all increased substantially, we're all her fans." Said Zhang Cai with a sense of

pride.

CEO? Isn't that my family's ice-cold wife? When Yang Chen thought of that, then looked at the 4 corners' clean and neat decorations, he seemed to gain some deep understanding of it.

Isn't it so? When looked at closely, these decorations are all cold-toned.

Zhao Hongyan suddenly turned her head and said, "I suddenly thought of something after she mentioned the CEO, yesterday the CEO called you to her office, what actually happened?"

"Haven't I said it already? She was just greeting a new colleague." Yang Chen vaguely replied.

"Who would believe you!" Zhao Hongyan coquettishly protested. She knew she couldn't get an answer out, so she changed questions, "Hey, Yang Chen, you've met our CEO, how does it feel to meet her?"

"What do you mean?"

"Did you come from Mars? You entered our company, how could it be that you don't know our Boss Lin has a reputation of being the number one beauty in Zhong Hai's business world?" Zhao Hongyan had a face of disbelief.

There's such a title? Yang Chen really didn't know, he laughed then said, "She's alright I guess, just ice-cold, merely looking at her can induce goosebumps in the heart."

"It goes without saying that the CEO should have a distinctive temperament." Liu Mingyu who kept silent suddenly threw in a line, Zhao Hongyan and Zhang Cai both followed with sounds of approval.

Yang Chen was surprised, he didn't expect that in the hearts of the workers of Yu Lei International, Lin Ruoxi's coldness was regarded as a distinctive temperament, moreover they seem particularly respectful to her. It seemed like it didn't matter if it was personal charm or management skills, his family's beautiful wife was indeed extraordinary in every way.

The 4 people took the dishes they wanted then sat at a comparatively larger table. At this time Yang Chen realized, at the east of the dining hall, there was a

space separated by a glass window with flower decorations, forming a private area, the tables inside were brightly colored, and the chairs were similarly colored leather sofas.

“Sitting inside there will definitely be even more comfortable, why hasn’t anybody gone in?” Yang Chen asked puzzlingly.

The 3 ladies took a glance, then Zhang Cai answered, “That is the dining area for the company’s management level, only those who possess positions of vice-head and above may enter, the management level’s food is also different, they have a great chef to specially cook for them.”

“Such a large area but there isn’t a soul?” Yang Chen felt a little pity, “How about we go over there, it will be a waste if it was empty anyways.”

Zhao Hongyan said, “At the vice-head level and above, which of them doesn’t have meetings often? Who will have the free time to eat at the company’s dining hall every day? However, you need not think of going in, rules are rules, little employees like us only need to do our part well.”

Liu Mingyu then said, “Actually, that can also be considered as a motivational policy for normal employees, only with a difference in treatment can one’s competitive spirit be raised. Only with a competitive spirit can one make progress, I think this is necessary.”

Yang Chen looked at his plate’s chicken cutlet and cauliflower, it’s cooked well, but with only the size of two hands, he gloomily frowned, “There’s so little dishes, so little rice, I only need 2 or 3 mouthfuls to finish it, it isn’t even as filling as a 5 dollars meal from a small restaurant.”

The 3 ladies looked at each other in dismay, all of them revealed expressions of being unable to understand. The fact was, they simply didn’t know what a 5 dollars meal from those small restaurants in the markets were like. Seeing Yang Chen’s expression of not having enough to eat, wordlessly, they began moving some of their dishes and rice on their plates to Yang Chen’s with their chopsticks.

“Usually we can’t finish our food, so we’ll let you have some.” Zhao Hongyan helplessly laughed, “In the future if you join us for lunch, we can avoid wasting food.”

Right at this moment, a line of people entered the dining hall, many workers in the dining hall quietly stood up, revealing a somewhat nervous expression, and greeted those people.

“Oh, the CEO and department heads have come, the department heads’ meeting has ended.” Zhang Cai cried out in alarm, stopped whatever she was doing, and stood up like the other ladies.

Standing at the forefront was the impressive Lin Ruoxi, with her hair tied up in a bun, and no cosmetics on her clean, moon-like face. That ice-cold temperament could repel others from a thousand miles away. She was like a heavenly goddess, in a pure black outfit, and seemed especially lucid and elegant beyond compare.

This was a woman who didn’t need any makeup, and only needs to be present to captivate her surroundings.

The other management level people who entered together with her proved this point. The majority of them were ladies, they wore fitting clothes, had graceful temperaments, some were older yet still attractive, while some were youthful and pretty. This included Yang Chen’s superior, the PR Department’s Mo Qianni. However, at that point of time, these glamorous beauties who followed behind Lin Ruoxi were like moons covered by the sun, and weren’t as dazzling as they usually were.

After a short glance or two, Yang Chen lowered his head, he felt that in this situation, it was better for him to just eat.

Therefore, as everybody present stopped eating and stood up to greet, Yang Chen who wolfed down his chicken cutlet, suddenly stood out like a sore thumb.

When Lin Ruoxi walked past Yang Chen, she didn’t stop for the slightest moment, and didn’t even pay a glance, as if she totally didn’t recognize Yang Chen. The fact was, when she just entered, she saw the scene of the 3 ladies adding food onto Yang Chen’s plate, and a burst of unhappiness entered her heart.

Her cheap husband, really thought of the company as his flirting spot! Furthermore, he even picked up *three* at a time!?

Instead when the others from the management level saw Yang Chen, whom unlike the other workers who were putting in the effort to please, only cared about raking in his meal. They felt displeased, but wasn't in the right situation to say something, and could only intentionally or unintentionally remember this person by heart, and include him in their blacklist.

Looking bright and charming, Mo Qianni who was in a light yellow outfit was at a meeting since early in the morning, and hadn't met Yang Chen yet. Upon seeing this scene, she also felt displeased, suddenly recalling something, a trace of teasing and taunting flashed in her eyes. She stopped by Yang Chen's side and said, "Yang Chen, be prepared to leave around 3 in the afternoon, you're coming with me to settle some work outside." With that said, she walked away without even looking back.

Yang Chen swallowed the mouthful of food, how could he not know? This lady superior who was displeased with him definitely intends to pull some tricks on him, he wanted to evade it by saying he was "very busy," but seeing Mo Qianni already seriously discussing something with the other management level people, she basically no longer paid any attention to him.

"I wish you good luck." Zhao Hongyan beside him winked at Yang Chen.

Yang Chen shrugged his shoulders, indifferently laughed, and continued burying his head into "battle."

Chapter 45: Negotiation

In the special region of Yu Lei International's dining hall, the management level employees split into numerous groups to softly discuss the problems from the meeting.

While on the CEO, Lin Ruoxi's side, other than the secretary and assistant Wu Yue, there were only 3 other female senior management-level employees who sat close. The other executives would also from time to time glance at their CEO, but didn't dare to get too close.

This caused Lin Ruoxi's surroundings to form an eccentric atmosphere, which was unusually weird.

The other person who sat closest to Lin Ruoxi was Mo Qianni, at that moment she didn't have the mood to eat the delicacies on her plate, she lowered her head to think for a moment, then finally spoke up with a low voice, "Boss Lin, the person you met yesterday, what do you think of him?"

Even while eating, Lin Ruoxi maintained an elegant posture, just like a princess who had been through etiquette training for the royal family. Hearing Mo Qianni's words, she put down her chopsticks and bowl naturally, and with an indifferent face asked, "Who?"

"That Yang Chen, isn't his attitude very bad?" Mo Qianni had constantly been puzzled by why Lin Ruoxi vetoed her proposal to fire Yang Chen.

It was impossible to tell if Lin Ruoxi intentionally or unintentionally turned to look into the main dining hall. She then picked up her chopsticks and bowl, and said, "If he does not make a big blunder, go against the company's interests, or harm the company's image, then don't pay attention to him. I will handle everything else." With that said, she continued to eat in small mouthfuls.

This time, Mo Qianni was even more bewildered, the expression on her elegant face rapidly changed, and in the end she still gave up asking what Lin Ruoxi's plan was. Her many years of experience told her that this woman, who was outrageously beautiful to the point where even jealousy was hard to arise

towards, was not willing to converse anymore on this topic.

Fine, since the CEO is not going to fire you, I will let you hand over the resignation letter yourself..... Mo Qianni hatefully thought.

o

In the afternoon Yang Chen played over an hour of games. Originally, he had planned to take an afternoon nap, he even prepared an inflatable pillow he borrowed from Zhao Hongyan, but Mo Qianni had indeed walked over.

Upon seeing his slim, graceful and beautiful superior, Yang Chen felt that it was going to be a pain in the ass. Why was it that on that confident and beautiful face of hers, a smile that resembled the way the big bad wolf looked at the three little piggies is present?

“Yang Chen, you have idled for most of the day, accompany me to a place to run some errands, there is a need for you to do some work.”

Yang Chen looked around at his surroundings, seeing his other female colleagues serious at work, holding in their laughter and not helping him, he helplessly said, “As a chauffeur I’m alright, as for other things I’ll have to consider.”

“When the time comes you’ll know what you need to do.” Mo Qianni was extremely angry, this fella still has an abandon life and court death attitude!

Following Mo Qianni into the basement carpark, Mo Qianni’s ride was a red Audi A4, the moment he got in, he could smell Mo Qianni’s enchanting body fragrance.

Yang Chen couldn’t resist enjoying a few sniffs, then laughed and said, “Miss Mo, your car’s interior is really fragrant, and has the same smell as you.”

“You’re really thick-skinned.” Mo Qianni’s pretty face couldn’t help but blush, “Are you always so frivolous in front of women?”

“This is nothing, if it smells good I’ll just smell more, after all ‘sniffing the fragrance is to know the woman.’ Those who secretly sniff are the wretched ones. A foreign scientific report I’ve read concludes that when men and women get together, attraction by scent plays a huge part. Once a man desires a

woman, when he gets together with that woman, it is frequently because that woman's body scent conforms to that man's preferences. Among the hundreds of couples they surveyed, almost all were able to find their mate by their body's scent." Yang Chen then winked at Mo Qianni.

"I'm too lazy to continue speaking to you." Mo Qianni started the car and ignored him, but a short time after starting the car, she couldn't help but ask curiously, "Does this mean that, when you married your wife, you depended on your nose to sniff?"

Yang Chen was stunned, in his mind the frosty and pretty face of Lin Ruoxi surfaced. In his heart he muttered, "My wife's smell is something men cannot endure." But his mouth laughed and said, "That is not the main point, I like my wife's smell, but I also like other women's smell, Miss Mo yours is not bad." After speaking, he took another big sniff.

"You....." If the Audi A4 had those ejection seats found on fighter planes, Mo Qianni truly wanted to have this vulgar fella ejected into the sky!

Throughout the whole journey, Mo Qianni's white face had a sheen of red on it, that she couldn't remove no matter how.

After more than a quarter of an hour, the car stopped at a relatively old office building. Mo Qianni breathed a sigh of relief, coldly glanced at Yang Chen, and said, "Can you see the Hua Cheng Apparels signboard?"

Yang Chen yawned, and widened his eyes to see. In the middle of the office building in front, there was indeed a sign with white background and black words stating "Hua Cheng Apparels Limited Company" on it.

"Is that our destination?" he asked.

"It's yours, not mine." A trace of craftiness flashed past Mo Qianni's face, "I need to go to another company to negotiate, this one is yours."

"Negotiate? About what?" Said Yang Chen bewilderedly.

"This Hua Cheng Apparels Company ordered 600,000 dollars worth of apparel the previous year, but still owe a balance of 400,000. Originally the deadline is next year, but I heard Hua Cheng is already on the verge of collapsing, so we need to expedite the return of that 400,000, to prevent bad debts."

Yang Chen felt that there was something wrong with this situation, “Miss Mo, so much money is at stake, yet you want a new employee like me to collect it? The difficulty is a little too high right?”

“The other PR employees all have things to do, and only you are idling about. Moreover I’m having you expedite a return on debt and not to kill people, if you are a man, then don’t dilly dally.” Said Mo Qianni as her pair of almond-like eyes stared at him.

The fact is, Yang Chen was really tempted to say “I am a man who dilly dallies.” But thinking about how he can’t get away from this, he accepted it, received the business transaction information from Mo Qianni’s hand, then very slowly walked towards the office building.

“Once you’re done give me a call, and I will come to pick you.” After Mo Qianni said that, she charmingly smiled, then made a U-turn and left the car park, and while she was at it, she turned off her cellphone.....

Yang Chen still hadn’t learned that he was fooled by his superior. He unhurriedly walked into the office building, and upon entering he saw a gaudily dressed receptionist with heavy makeup who was painting her nails to overcome boredom.

When the woman saw Yang Chen enter, she immediately revealed an enchanting smile, “Mister, do you need any service?”

Yang Chen brandished the brown envelope in his hand, “I’m from Yu Lei International, I’m hoping to discuss a problem regarding the funds of our business deal.”

“Yu Lei International?” The woman gave Yang Chen an odd glance, then proceeded to check some things on the computer at the front desk, before she queried, “Excuse me, is it regarding the business deal’s outstanding balance?”

Yang Chen was happy, it seemed like this company was pretty good, they recognized the matter so quickly, and doesn’t plan to renege on the debt, making it easier on him. He then nodded, “That’s right.”

The woman smiled extremely charmingly, walked up with her hands together on her abdomen, squeezing her pair of particularly eye-catching well endowed

breasts. That deep ravine looked like it could draw someone to fall into its abyss, “Mister, please follow me, I shall bring you to the manager’s office.” With that said, she turned her slim waist and outstanding butt, and leisurely walked to the elevator.

At the same time Yang Chen kept up with her, seeing the woman’s swaying rear view, a comfortable feeling aroused in his heart, seems like that little girl Mo Qianni is not bad, this debt chasing job is not bad at all!

§

Chapter 46: Mister Has Great Insight

Following the receptionist into the elevator, he discovered that the elevator was shabby like the building. On the four corners there were even advertisements that people usually only paste on lamp-posts, things like folk remedies that could cure big and small illnesses, with directions to go to a specific lane, to a specific alley or address, there were all kinds. Rhetoric and gorgeous to the point that it can turn those large and proper mainstream advertising companies red with shame.

Yang Chen relished in seeing the various advertising languages, continuously nodding he said, "These advertisements are great, I like it."

The lady who constantly maintained a lovely smile staggered, awkwardly smiled and said, "*Mister has great insight.*"

The elevator only stopped when it reached the top floor, walking out of the elevator, Yang Chen was flabbergasted. He was surprised to smell the pungent scent of smoke.....

He saw that in the large office in front, the arrangement of desks and chairs were in a mess, all kinds of paper, newspapers, paper napkins, toilet paper and even used women's underwear were randomly strewn on the ground. The computer monitors were mostly covered in some kind of filth and were blurry, while many monitors were obviously smashed broken.

It was as if the entire hall hasn't been cleaned for several hundred years, dust flew around chaotically, even half the fluorescent lights on the ceiling were blown.

This scene was like an abandoned office, moreover the type that has been maliciously wrecked before. But what made Yang Chen bewildered was, inside this place the "office workers" were a tide of people moving about.

He could see a ton of people wearing all kinds of strange clothing, some are young, some are old, consisting of both men and women, who were assembled at different tables. They were either loudly throwing dice, tapping on show hand

poker, playing mahjong or even playing solitaire.

A majority of the men had cigarettes in their mouths, swallowing in clouds and spitting fog, the women were also gaudily dressed, walking around the men. It was unknown if they enjoyed being taken advantage of, or enjoyed freeloading off men.

Breathing in the air that had smoke fumes that could choke a dead person, Yang Chen finally understood, this was a “gangster company” opened by friends in the underworld! It’s no wonder nobody came to chase for the debt from Yu Lei International. It’s likely that they only realized it after the deal was made, and probably nobody from the PR Department dared to come!

Actually Yang Chen was half-right, Yu Lei International indeed realized Hua Cheng Apparel Company basically wasn’t a regular company after the deal was made. At that time, because the business transaction wasn’t considered big, after receiving the deposit they sent the goods. But after that, when they did send specialized personnel to chase for payment, it was a pity that every person who saw Hua Cheng Company’s true side all pissed their pants and ran away. Hua Cheng Apparel’s boss even sent out word, that if anybody still dares to ask for payment, they would beat the person to death and throw him out.

Because the contract’s deadline hasn’t been reached, Yu Lei International also didn’t have the option of filing for a lawsuit, so they could only stay passive and let things drag on.

By having Yang Chen come here, Mo Qianni obviously planned to use Hua Cheng to “attack by using the strength of another” and have Yang Chen leave the company of his own accord because of this.

To an average person, this kind of scene was indeed frightening, but to Yang Chen, rather than frightening, it was somewhat familiar to him. It could even be considered child’s play to him.

The front desk receptionist turned around, expecting to see what kind of frightened expression this fool had, but instead saw Yang Chen’s interested appearance, looking in all directions with a smile.

What an idiot, let’s see if you can still smile in a while! The woman sneered in her heart.

“Mister, our manager’s office is right over there, please follow me.” Said the woman with a cold laugh.

Yang Chen nodded, laughed and said, “Your office environment is pretty good, even letting people smoke in the office, not bad, not bad.”

Some black lines hung on the woman’s forehead, she was already suspecting whether Yu Lei International had sent a fool.

The appearance of Yang Chen attracted quite a number of gazes from Hua Cheng employees, several well-built males evilly grinned as they walked over, looking at Yang Chen with provoking and contemptful looks. A dark-faced well-built man extended his hand to casually touch the woman’s body, while asking who Yang Chen was.

This woman obviously had an “unordinary” relationship with this group of people, as her boobs were fondled by that man a few times, she flirtatiously laughed. Under the bright light her face remained joyful as she replied, “He’s sent by Yu Lei International to chase for the debt, he wants me to bring him to see the boss.”

“From Yu Lei International again?” Several men and women laughed out loud, “Two months ago that man said he’s a black belt in Taekwondo, but he was still crippled in a few moments, what belt is this brat then?”

The crowd of hoodlum employees all laughed in mockery, looking at Yang Chen with an incomparably interested gazes, as if he was a fish on the chopping block, just about to be filleted.

A round-faced delinquent girl who wore a black short-sleeves shirt and denim miniskirt came forward, blew a breath of smoke towards Yang Chen, and coyly said, “Hey handsome, why chase a debt, come accompany big sister to experience some fresh pleasures!”

“You little vixen hadn’t had your fill last night, how about some brothers here take turns to battle with you for several hundred rounds!?” The other short-haired skinny man loudly laughed and said.

The delinquent girl covered her mouth and smiled, then raised her miniskirt and swayed it back and forth, with a welcoming expression, “Great, big sis is

standing right here, you guys can all come!”

“That sounds good.” The dark-faced man who was rubbing the receptionist’s butt gave Yang Chen a look of scorn, “Coincidentally, a fresh pretty boy delivered himself to us today, so our brothers can still explore some new positions.”

Hearing this small bunch of bandits spouting nonsense to scare him, Yang Chen couldn’t help but feel that this was funny. He was too lazy to speak to them anymore. Seeing the front desk’s receptionist in the dark-faced man’s embrace and moaning, he nearly turned into a pool of water. He then minded his own business and walked towards the manager’s office.

“Hey! Brat! Are you treating our words as shit or are you deaf!?” The dark-faced man saw Yang Chen simply ignoring him, and immediately became angry.

Yang Chen carried on walking, totally ignoring him.

The dark-faced man was enraged to the point his face and hands were twitching. He pushed away the receptionist in his embrace, pointed at Yang Chen and shouted, “Brat, do you believe that if you take one more step, I will kick your balls till they burst!?”

This time, Yang Chen stopped, and slowly turned his head to glance at the dark-faced man.

With a mere glance, the dark-faced man felt as if he fell into an abyss of ice, with all of his blood congealed!

What kind of gaze is this, without any chance of survival, without any possibility of resisting, a powerful feeling of oppression as if trying to suffocate a person, pushing a person into an ash-colored world of desolation without ever coming back.....

“I’m here to pursue a debt, not here to play with you guys.” Yang Chen naturally turned his body back, tossed away the documents folder to one side, and with soft steps he walked towards the large man. With a dull voice like plain water he said, “Originally, even if you guys didn’t pay, I wouldn’t even mind, if you gave me the money I would’ve instead found going through the procedures to return it troublesome. However, being spoken to like that by you, now I’m really planning to bring some money back. To be honest, I’m a very easy-going

person, if you didn't cross the line, and it's just a joke or two everybody can laugh about it. But you people.....Why are your brains so uncivilized? I will only say this once.....”

“I, hate being threatened the most.....”

The moment those words were spoken, it was as if Yang Chen disappeared from where he was in a flash, when he once again appeared, everybody present could only see that the previously standing dark-faced man's body was crooked, and slowly dropped onto the ground, foaming at the mouth, with his eyes rolled back as he fainted. He had actually fainted from the pain!

Yang Chen stood by the large man's side, withdrew the fist he slammed into the large man's stomach, and indifferently looked at his surroundings. He then evilly smiled and asked, “What are you people dawdling for? Your brother has been hit, aren't you all going to avenge him?”

Chapter 47: You're Even An Action Movie Star

Yang Chen's words were like a spark falling into a barrel of gunpowder, the entire hall's men and women all revealed wrathful looks.

"This brat is tired of living, don't think that nobody here dares to touch you just because you have some skills!". A man with a large physique threw down the poker cards in his hand, furiously raised his clenched fist and dashed at Yang Chen.

Yang Chen didn't even lift his eyebrows, he fished for a cigarette in his clothes with one hand, while the other casually moved to block the fist swung at him. Abruptly, Yang Chen's claw-shaped hand rapidly moved, and before that large fist landed, the man's wrist was tightly grasped.

With a slight turn of the wrist, in the blink of an eye, the man's hand changed forms just like twisted churros!

"OWWW!!!"

The man cried in pain, and fell to the ground holding onto his hand. The bones in his arm were completely dislocated, and he was in so much pain that he had cold sweat all over!

The rest of the hoodlums, who originally planned to charge in and beat Yang Chen to a pulp saw this dramatic reversal, and couldn't help but stop their legs and hesitate. They were afraid of losing face, but were even more afraid of pain!

After Yang Chen lit up a cigarette, and enjoyed a puff. The crowd of men and women who were just hooting now revealed bewildered and irresolute expressions as they carefully observed at Yang Chen. They didn't press forward but also didn't retreat.

"Those who become well-known gangsters, are mostly those who don't care much about their face, it seems like you people can only be considered intern gangsters, and haven't become true gangsters."

Yang Chen sneered, then picked up the document folder, "Your boasting

abilities are much stronger than your fighting abilities, I don't know what the people Yu Lei previously sent for Public Relations were like, but I think there's a little difference between me and them."

After finishing, Yang Chen turned around and continued walking towards the manager's office.

"This mister has great skill, but you came into my office, yet treated my subordinates like this, it is indeed difficult for me, this Guo to swallow."

A hoarse male voice was heard coming from the manager's office. Slowly, a mature middle-aged man who had a sharp face and wore an ash-colored suit and shiny leather shoes walked out.

"Boss!!"

This group of gangsters, who had lost their vigor previously began shouting once again upon the appearance of this man, as if this man could bring back all the face they had lost.

Yang Chen looked at the man with interest, his side-parting hairstyle, Armani suit, Louis Vuitton leather belt, and Pierre Cardin leather shoes, they all fit well with that calm and prideful look only successful people possessed. No matter from what angle, he looked like a big company's manager, and not the leader of these hoodlums, or the main boss of a dummy corporation.

No wonder Yu Lei suffered a loss, it turns out that there was a secret boss, Yang Chen snickered in his heart.

"Mister debt chaser sent from Yu Lei International, your actions makes things difficult for this Guo, what do you think is the best way to manage this situation?" Boss Guo revealed a nefarious smile, looking resolute yet indifferent, like an old school gentleman from the west.

Yang Chen looked at the information inside the folder. The person with the surname Guo in front should be the this hoodlum company's boss, Guo Ziheng.

"These expensive apparel of yours are pretty good, you must have cheated quite a large sum of money."

"I've never cheated money, without strength, no matter how you cheat

nobody will give you money. I am from the school of strength, not the school of idols.” Guo Ziheng appeared to be entertained.

Yang Chen flicked away the cigarette ash and said, “The way you act arrogant has even greater prospects than me. I can at most win a Golden Horse award, while you can already win an Oscar.”

[TL: The Golden Horse Film Festival and Awards is a film festival and awards ceremony held annually in Taiwan.]

“Oh?” Guo Ziheng coldly laughed and said, “But why do I feel that, this mister is the one from the school of idols?”

“And how did you figure that out?” Yang Chen laughed as he asked.

“What I see is a fool, one who totally doesn’t understand what he is doing, a blockhead with the same amount of self-confidence as a retard.....” Said Guo Ziheng, as he suddenly took off his Armani suit jacket, revealing his white Gucci dress shirt.

Witnessing this scene, the rowdy men and women in the hall all began shouting, yelling at the top of their lungs for Boss Guo to put down this arrogant brat.

Guo Ziheng signalled everybody in the hall to keep quiet. With some arrogance on his face, he lightly stretched his muscles. It was as if the muscles in that dress shirt were alive as it bulged out, and cracking sounds emitted from his bones.

“Yo, *you’re even an action movie star?*” Yang Chen was merry, “Quite a lot of effort was spent on sculpting that body, with those muscles you can even enter a male beauty contest, and qualify to live off rich women.”

“You are courting death.”

Yang Chen sighed, “I advise you to put on your clothes and return the money. I don’t really want to make a move, someone from the school of idols like you also need to keep up with appearances right?”

Guo Ziheng was finally furious, he suddenly took a big stride charging forward!

Sure enough, a body full of strong muscles was not just for show, after Guo Ziheng rushed till he was two-thirds of a metre from Yang Chen, then he threw a

roundhouse kick at lightning speed!

He most likely had learned a mixed martial art of some sort, Guo Ziheng's movements were extremely proficient, with ample strength!

This kick brought forth a gale, which directly blew all the documents on the surrounding tables into mid-air!

Under the circumstances where everybody didn't know where the kick was going to land, unbeknownst to anybody, Yang Chen suddenly moved his left hand to guard the position slightly below his chest.

"Bam!"

Unlike how everybody present thought, Yang Chen was not sent flying by that kick. Instead, they saw the leg of Guo Ziheng tightly caught by the ankle in Yang Chen's left hand, exactly at an inch below Yang Chen's chest, unable to move an inch forward!

"The accuracy is not bad, just a bit slow." Said Yang Chen as if he was evaluating a student's performance.

Guo Ziheng was terrified inside, his mixed martial arts standard was unlike those plays on television where they casually swing about, it was real abilities honed by taking lives in underground fights. The power and speed of that kick of his was something he understood clearly, there had never been a person who could subdue it like this, blocking his attack as if it was a child playing house!

The intense feeling of humiliation made Guo Ziheng's heart irritable, and his face was purplish-red as he fiercely said, "Let go....."

That's right! He was simply unable break his leg free from Yang Chen's grasp!

How can this man be so ridiculously strong!?

"You return the money, and I will let go." Yang Chen casually smiled and said.

A trace of severity flashed across Guo Ziheng's eyes, "I have to return to my office to retrieve my chequebook."

"That is obedient of you." Yang Chen nodded, then released the grip on Guo Ziheng's leg.

Everybody present were incomparably shocked, they simply couldn't believe that the boss who in their hearts can never fail would suddenly lose at the hands of this plain and average looking young man. The bunch of men and women couldn't help but begin retreating to the elevator's entrance.

After Guo Ziheng took an unresigned look at Yang Chen, he slowly returned to his office, in no more than a minute, he once again walked out.

"You will regret the decision you made today, I, Guo Ziheng, have never lost, therefore, today you must die!"

Guo Ziheng slowly walked out of his office, that handsome face of his had a hazy look cast on his face, and madness in his eyes.

Surprisingly, in his hands was a loaded rifle! The deep-dark muzzle was pointed directly at Yang Chen's forehead!

§

Chapter 48: Two Types Of People Who Are The Scariest

Yang Chen laughed, he truly couldn't resist from laughing again.

It was unexpected, that just as a gun was pointed at him by somebody yesterday, there's another person pointing a gun at him again today.

In Huaxia where gun control are incomparably strict, the number of guns that appeared seemed to be even more than when he was overseas.

"Manager Guo, could it be that you don't know that this gun is used for hunting in America? Why are you pointing it at me? I'm not a moose, and also not a black bear."

Guo Ziheng took it as Yang Chen being afraid, he coldly laughed and said, "In my eyes, right now you're merely a rabbit for me to slaughter. You can't possibly think that within this 4 to 5 metres distance, I'm not even able to hit you with this long-range gun right?"

The corners of Yang Chen's mouth rose as he unhesitantly took a step forward, "What do you think?"

"Don't move! If you take one more step forward I will shoot!!" A drop of cold sweat flowed down Guo Ziheng's cheek as he loudly roared.

Yang Chen ignored him, and took another step forward.

"I am standing right here, the gun is in your hands, the gun is loaded. You are directly facing me. What you should do, and what you can do, are all for you to decide." Yang Chen carelessly threw the cigarette he finished smoking onto the ground, stamped on it to put it out, then continued walking forward.

Every step stirred the hearts of everybody present, like thunderclaps in their heart. Each and every step Yang Chen took, it was as if their hearts were drums being drummed on.

It was so silent that if a pin dropped everybody could hear it. It was as if all the

air had been drawn out in this short period of time. In the entire office hall, there was only the sound of Yang Chen's slow and well-balanced footsteps.

A mere 4 to 5 metres distance, a path of merely 6 or 7 steps, but everybody had their hearts leaping up to their throats, while blankly staring at them. Even the 2 men on the ground who were easily knocked down by Yang Chen, were in pain but held their breaths watching this scene.

Guo Ziheng's finger only needed to lightly pull the trigger for a violent bullet to tear through that human body of flesh and blood!

Yang Chen's expression was indifferent, there wasn't much difference compared to going towards a person to shake their hands. His eyes were so insipid, as if the moment of life and death in front of his eyes didn't exist!

In actuality, only 3 seconds went by as all these happened. When Yang Chen walked right in front of Guo Ziheng, Guo Ziheng's face was already deathly pale, with a head covered in cold sweat, and a numb expression.

"In this world there are *two types of people who are the scariest*, the first one, lunatics. The second, people who aren't afraid of death. The reason why lunatics are scary, is because they might not fear death. I'm not even afraid of death, do you think there's a point pointing a gun at me?" Yang Chen lightly smiled, and very easily seized the rifled in Guo Ziheng's hands, Guo Ziheng simply forgot to resist.

"Ka cha!"

Yang Chen casually made a breaking motion with his hands, and the rifle made of metal, snapped into pieces, just like a reed!

This scene and sound pulled everybody back to reality, with their hearts trembling in fear!

This..... Isn't this the kind of scene that only exists in Hollywood movies!? This person! Is he superman!? He even broke a rifle!!

Flinging away the broken rifle to the side, Yang Cheng dusted his hands, and with a smile that didn't seem like a smile he said, "Boss Guo, this time can you go and retrieve the cheque book for real?"

Like his soul had returned, Guo Ziheng's whole body trembled as he gazed upon the young man smiling at him with an expression of looking at a monster. Since he started his career, he had met fierce ones, but he truly haven't met one that doesn't care about living.

The thing that was scarier was this young man's expression, which seemed to be faintly telling him, even if he pulled the trigger, there was still nothing he could do to him!

How can it be!? There truly is someone in this world who isn't afraid of bullets!?

"If you want money there isn't any, if you want a life there is one here." Guo Ziheng said this fierce line, he wanted to maintain that final bit of dignity as an underworld boss.

"Tch tch" Yang Chen shook his head in pity, "Why are you unable to get things straight? If you really could beat me, you would have pulled the trigger earlier. You don't even have the guts to pull the trigger, which proves that you are still afraid of death. You can't beat me, don't force me to do some things I haven't done in a long time."

"I admit that you are better at fighting than me, you also have big guts, but I just won't give you money!!" Guo Ziheng abruptly slammed on the table, yelling with a sinister face.

"Then don't blame me, my temper has already turned a lot warmer than before."

Yang Chen revealed a strange smile with a momentary excitement, his body moved at lightning speed to Guo Ziheng's back. At the same time, Yang Chen fiercely put strength into his hands, grabbing Guo Ziheng by his upper arms at a speed that Guo Ziheng simply couldn't react to.

He sent one kick onto Guo Ziheng's ankle, causing Guo Ziheng to stagger and kneel on the ground!

"Crack!!"

One could only hear the sounds of bones breaking, and Guo Ziheng's pained roar, his two arms were unexpectedly dislocated from the shoulders!

One of Yang Chen legs stepped on Guo Ziheng's calf, forcing him to stay kneeling without any method of getting up, and able to only unceasingly move his waist. In the end, Yang Chen's leg stepped with more strength, causing Guo Ziheng to be too afraid to make the slightest bit of movement.

"You! What did you do to my arms!!" Guo Ziheng bared his teeth in pain, and stared at Yang Chen with bloodshot eyes.

"Nothing much, I just made your arms dislocate from your shoulders." Yang Chen happily replied.

"You..... You think I will give you the money and admit defeat just from this! Impossible!!"

Guo Ziheng loudly proclaimed, while his other subordinates were all frightened to the point they were trembling and too afraid to move. They watched their boss get beaten till he knelt, yet didn't dare step forward.

They came here to be bullies, not to throw their lives away.

Yang Chen shook his finger, "You're wrong, this is only the beginning, how can I possibly only do this one thing to you?"

The moment he said that, Yang Chen once again grabbed hold of Guo Ziheng's arms.

"Crack crack!"

"Ahhh!!!" Another blood-curdling scream came from Guo Ziheng, "What did you do now!?"

"Crack crack!!"

Immediately followed was again the sound of joints being dislocated.

Yang Chen showed a satisfied smile, "Nothing much, I just dislocated your arm, then put it back, dislocated it again, put it back, then dislocated it again, I did it a few times to practice, I feel like I have slowed down some. I reckon that you are in pain, don't worry, I just need to practice a few more times and you won't feel much pain anymore....."

"Demon! Demon! This man is a demon!!!

Guo Ziheng completely crumbled, he knew that if this went on, he won't die, but might suffer more than dying, this is what they mean by wishing for death while alive!!

The pain from his hands and leg, bore their way into his heart, his brain nearly went into shock a few times, yet he was pulled back by the unbearable pain!

"I.....I will pay....."

When Yang Chen once again put the joints of his arms back in place, Guo Ziheng truly couldn't endure anymore.

Guo Ziheng's lips were already turning green, his voice brought with it a slight crying sound. That's right, he cried, he had tears flowing, he felt humiliation, he felt unresigned, but more importantly, he felt pain!

"This is the way it should be." Yang Chen released Guo Ziheng's arms with satisfaction, with a 'hehe' laugh, still maintaining that harmless expression, as he said, "However, Manager Guo, in view of the series of harm you dealt towards our company, I feel that other than the balance of 400,000, you should compensate me for the trauma I received mentally. Oh right, since the money has been owed for such a long time, it should be returned with interest or something, at the same time it would be good to reimburse the medical expenses of those you and your goons hurt before, don't you think so?"

"You....."

"I, what I? You aren't giving? Fine! Then we shall continue....."

"No no no! I give! I give! I will give whatever you want!!" Guo Ziheng shouted, with snivel and tears.

Yang Chen grinned, pulled a chair over and sat down, and said to Guo Ziheng who was crying on the floor, "Since you are giving whatever I want, then hurry up and write the cheque, it would be good for me to report that back. Oh right, book a car to send me back to Yu Lei International, I didn't bring enough change to take a taxi."

Chapter 49: Accidental Meeting In The Hallway

Upon returning back to Yu Lei International from Hua Cheng Gangster Company, it was already 4 in the afternoon, and approaching the time to get off work.

Yang Chen was in a fantastic mood, disregarding the exercise, he even earned some allowance, he no longer had to worry about the money needed to buy breakfast for the ladies in office.

Right after he got out of the elevator, he walked through the hallway towards the PR Department, this hallway was built using reinforced glass. The transparency allowed the gentle orange radiance of the setting sun to fall upon every nook and cranny inside. This made the hallway exude an aura of warmth, beauty, and peace.

Right at this moment, a scene in front made Yang Chen suddenly stop in his tracks.

It was a man and woman, the man should belong to the higher management in the company. He wore a white business shirt and suit pants, and he had a seemingly fat figure with an already bald head. He wasn't tall, but had a clean appearance, and a pair of small eyes.

Yang Chen remembered seeing this person during lunch time, so he knew that this person was a department-head level person.

As for the woman, he could recognize her merely from the rear view . She wore a light purple outfit, and dyed her hair with streaks of purplish-red, along with that graceful and well developed curves. This was precisely Liu Mingyu from his office.

“Department Head Ma, I really have something on today. We can go another time when there's a chance.” At this moment, Liu Mingyu's face was a little pained, as she forcefully smiled and said.

The one addressed as Department Head Ma smiled with deep meaning as he said, “Oh, Mingyu, you have already rejected my invitation more than 10 times consecutively. What? Is it so hard to have a drink with an old man like me? Or do you simply look down upon me, this Ma?”

“That’s not it Department Head Ma.” Liu Mingyu eyebrows creased, “I..... I really have something on, tomorrow I still have to negotiate with a client, I honestly have no time.”

Department Head Ma’s smiling face gradually faded away, and he spoke with some coldness, “Liu Mingyu, you better not fail to appreciate kindness. Don’t think that I’m unaware of the rotten things you did with those clients of yours. In the whole company about 70 to 80 percent knows, what are you pretending to be pure and virtuous for!”

“Department Head Ma, you.....” Liu Mingyu’s eyes turned a little moist, but she still resolutely endured, with her voice clearly turning cold she said, “Department Head Ma, please do not spout nonsense. Rumors and slanders cannot decide what kind of person I truly am.”

“Haha..... Number one in performance every year, you think everybody is too stupid to see? You are a flower in our PR Department that only lets outsiders pluck, Liu Mingyu you are being too stingy.....” Department Head Ma revealed a wretched smile, “Be at ease, if you go for a drink with me..... I won’t treat you unfairly. The end of year bonuses and whatnot can be discussed.....”

“Department Head Ma please take note of your image!” Liu Mingyu turned her head away, seemingly unwilling to speak more, pain was shown on her charming pretty face.

Department Head Ma wanted to say something more, yet suddenly felt that someone tapped his shoulder from behind.

“Who!?”

Displeased, Department Head Ma turned around, and saw an unfamiliar young man giving him a strange smile.

“Who are you!?” Department Head Ma’s heart shivered, and he asked carefully.

Yang Chen roughly understood the situation by listening to their conversation nearby. At this moment he didn't have a favorable impression of this fat old man that had no skills in picking up girls, hearing the question, he only smiled and said, "Hi Department Head Ma, I am the PR Department's new male employee, my name is Yang Chen."

"Male employee?" Department Head Ma revealed a pondering expression, "What are you doing here, what did you hear?"

"Oh, I was just coincidentally passing by, hearing Department Head Ma discuss with big sis Mingyu about going out to play at night, I wanted to ask if I could join. Department Head Ma, you might not know this, but I am very familiar with the brothels around here." With that said, he even winked at Department Head Ma.

Department Head Ma's eye twitched, "Brat, you want to threaten me? Do you know who I am? Just what did you hear? If you have no evidence, speak drivel and I will personally fire you!"

Seeing Yang Chen appear, Liu Mingyu at first felt a little happy inside, but when she saw Department Head Ma grilling Yang Chen, she was worried about him, and constantly tried to hint at Yang Chen to quickly leave.

Yang Chen naturally wouldn't just leave, he drew out his phone with a smile, shook it and said, "Department Head Ma, you should be aware that phones are now very advanced, not only can they record voices, they can also do it really clearly."

With that, Department Head Ma's face immediately turned ugly, clenching his teeth he said, "What do you want....."

"I don't want anything, depending on Department Head Ma's attitude in cooperating. Pretend that nothing happened, then I shall do the same, and everybody will be safe and sound." Yang Chen indifferently spoke, "If Department Head Ma wants to deal with me, then I'm sorry to say that it will be a life and death struggle. But I think, for a small employee and Department Head Ma to mutually self-destruct, Department Head Ma would be the one who loses more for sure."

Department Head Ma had never experienced this kind of blackmail before, and

almost fainted from anger. After saying the word “good” thrice consecutively, he fiercely glared at Yang Chen and Liu Mingyu, then left the scene in a rage.

Liu Mingyu sighed in relief as she patted her chest, those plump breasts of hers shook a little, causing Yang Chen to stare blankly.

Unhappily rolling her eyes at Yang Chen, Liu Mingyu also wasn't shy, “Hey, stop staring, your eyeballs are falling out.”

“Hehe, big sis Mingyu's figure is really good.” Yang Chen honestly commended.

Liu Mingyu's pretty face blushed, and she playfully said, “It is unexpected that you can be so quick-witted, and even know to record with your phone, otherwise I really wouldn't know what to do. Department Head Ma is a senior in the company, and also the Finance Department's Head, not many people dare to go head to head with him in Yu Lei.”

Yang Chen didn't seem to mind as he laughed and showed the cellphone's display to Liu Mingyu.

Liu Mingyu stared blankly, then immediately laughed to the point her body shook, “Spoiled brat! So you were fooling him, this shows that he is really stupid, he didn't even check if he was really recorded.”

“His skills in picking up girls was so bad, his brain definitely can't be any good either.” Said Yang Chen as if this was to be expected.

Once the discussion was over, the two stood in the empty hallway with an awkward atmosphere, Liu Mingyu stayed silent for a while, then lowered her head and said, “Yang Chen, can I trouble you with something?”

“Speak.” Yang Chen could roughly guess what it was about.

“Don't spread what happened here today, just treat it as if nothing happened.”

“Actually you don't have to be like this, getting harassed often isn't a good thing, why not think of a way to deal with that Department Head Ma.” In his heart, Yang Chen considered whether to inform his wife Lin Ruoxi, although that girl liked acting cold, she can't possibly ignore her female employees, right?

Liu Mingyu bitterly smiled as she shook her head, “From the moment I entered

the company, I have gotten best performance in the PR Department every year for the these few years. Suspicion and jealousy from others is something that will definitely exist. Moreover, I have never gone to look for a boyfriend, so it's natural that everybody thought I'm that sort of person..... Even if Department Head Ma was gone, there would be others like Department Head Ma that come. Rather than that, why not keep the peace. The sisters in the office trust me, that is enough. I don't want to make everybody worry.....”

“With your qualifications, why don't you find a boyfriend?” Yang Chen found the crux of the problem.

Isn't it so? Such a pretty woman without a taker, which man wouldn't have ideas about her?

§

Chapter 50: Colleague

Bitterness was displayed in Liu Mingyu's eyes as she thought of the past, she shook her head, and with a smile she said, "I have a boyfriend, he went to serve in the army, but I haven't received a message until now, and he still hasn't returned."

"Doesn't serving the army take 2 years before returning? He signed on?" Asked Yang Chen in bewilderment.

"I don't know, his family also moved....." Liu Mingyu smiled with exhaustion and said, "Perhaps it's as the others said, and he took up some kind of important post."

"To continue dragging on like this isn't the solution. You are a woman, and should know the importance of age." Yang Chen silently cursed that man for throwing away a woman like that, taking up that secret job or something, what for?

Liu Mingyu nodded, "So what? I always think of him, and I can't forget him, how can I accept another man?" Stopping for a moment, she then smiled and continued, "Alright, let's not mention these things, it's about time to get off work, let's return to the office."

Naturally, Yang Chen had no objection. Since the victim had already requested not to make a fuss out of this, he could only listen to her.

That said, Yang Chen still held the cheque written by Guo Ziheng, and he had to hand it over to his heartless, and boring beautiful superior.

When he entered the office, a bunch of office ladies had already begun dressing themselves up to prepare to get off from work. They groomed themselves prettily, obviously wanting to go enjoy the radiant, and passionate night life.

Zhao Hongyan and Zhang Cai were instead pretty tranquil, they didn't specially put on makeup, seeing Yang Chen return, they smiled and greeted him.

“Did the task go smoothly? You returned so late.” Asked Zhao Hongyan.

Yang Chen nodded, he curiously asked, “Why did you and Zhang Cai not groom yourselves like the others, or change your clothes?”

Zhao Hongyan grudgingly sighed and said, “Can’t you tell? Zhang Cai and I are both married women, the both of us married last year, what need do we have for those.”

“So you guys were married?!” Yang Chen was really shocked, he felt deep affection for the 2 newlywed women. No wonder their figures were more well-rounded than the other female colleagues.

Zhang Cai laughed and said, “Yang Chen it can’t be that you really wanted to do something to us right? We have husbands, don’t fight with them for us.”

“Yang Chen is also a married person with a wife, we’re the same.” Zhao Hongyan pursed her lips into a smile and said.

In his heart Yang Chen thought, can the relationship between him and that girl Lin Ruoxi still be considered husband and wife? Naturally, he didn’t say it out, and after awkwardly smiling, he ran towards Mo Qianni’s office with his tail between his legs.

The desk lamp was already turned on in the office, and its light rays were all over the dark room. Mo Qianni had taken off her jacket, and only had a pure white short-sleeved blouse on, seriously writing something.

On top of her sharp nose laid a pair of gold-rimmed spectacles, her hair was tied simply into a ponytail, with a few strands of hair covering her smooth face. She had a concentrated expression, so much so that she didn’t even notice Yang Chen lightly pushing the door open.

This was a beautiful young lady that looked pleasing no matter how she groomed herself, just that she had a bad temper. Perhaps the majority of beauties had this sort of shortcoming, Yang Chen realistically thought.

“Don’t you know to knock the door first?” Mo Qianni finally noticed Yang Chen who had walked to the opposite side of the table. Although she was very curious as to how this man seemed unscathed with his hateful smile still remaining, but naturally she wouldn’t even bat an eyelid, and indifferently asked.

Yang Chen pulled a chair over and sat down, then placed the cheque in his hand onto the table very slowly, “I don’t have much experience, next time I’ll take note to knock.”

“What’s this?” Mo Qianni put down the pen in her hand, and stared at the cheque on the table with skepticism—amount, 400,000 dollars.

Yang Chen laughed, “Didn’t Miss Mo send me to chase a debt? A balance of 400,000 dollars, not a cent less.”

Mo Qianni picked up the cheque, and looked at the drawer’s column, it was really Hua Cheng Apparel’s shameless hoodlum leader, Guo Ziheng. Shocked, she raised her head to take a good look at Yang Chen, she truly had no idea how this fella managed to make the opposite party obediently hand over the money they owed.

“You’re..... unharmed right?” Mo Qianni finally couldn’t resist asking. She sized Yang Chen up, she kept thinking that Yang Chen should only return after desperately struggling and being beaten to a pulp. The past few times even specialized personnel were sent, and they all entered the hospital, there was even one who was still injured and was still wheelchair bound.

Yang Chen pretended to know nothing, he made a motion with his hands, and “puzzlingly” asked, “What harm, isn’t it just asking for a payment? I found them pretty easy to talk to, it was even Boss Guo who personally ordered people to send me back.

Curse it! Could it be that the bunch of gangsters have turned into herbivores!? Mo Qianni was enraged in her heart, to be able to bring back the money owed was of course a good thing. But seeing the man in front of her eyes without any injuries, and with that relaxed face, why did she feel so unresigned in her heart!?

Such emotions naturally couldn’t be shown on the surface, Mo Qianni took a deep breath, then said, “Thanks for your trouble, you will receive a bonus along with the end of month’s salary, you may get off work now.”

“Then I really have to thank Miss Mo.” Appearing to be very satisfied, Yang Chen nodded, stood up and walked to the door, right before he walked out, he turned his head back, and with a smile that wasn’t a smile he said, “Miss Mo, that black clothing of yours is not bad, very pretty.....”

After Yang Chen left, Mo Qianni was still baffled and looked down at her body, she was obviously wearing a white blouse, where did the black come from?

Taking a careful look, she realized there were 2 faintly black areas in front of her chest, it was because the blouse seemed a little translucent due to the desk light, which was why the brief outline could be seen. That wasn't a blouse, it was a bra!

"Yang Chen....." Once she understood, Mo Qianni flushed with anger and clenched her teeth, she slammed the tabletop with her palm, and her eyes looked as if fire was about to be shot out, "Just you wait!"

After bidding farewell to the numerous sisters in the office, Yang Chen finally understood the joy of being a white collared worker. This job was indeed a little boring compared to selling mutton skewers, but its 'environment' was indeed pretty good. Merely the ladies' fragrance that permeates the air was not something that the stink of the farmers' market could compare to.

Arriving at the basement carpark, Yang Chen got into his car, and suddenly his phone rang, it was Li Jingjing.

Yang Chen laughed and picked up the phone, "Hello."

"Big brother Yang....." Li Jingjing's words were spoken with a tinge of happiness, "Thank you."

"Thank me for what?" Yang Chen naturally wouldn't take the initiative to admit that he was the one who slaughtered Chen Dehai.

"For the matter regarding Chen Dehai....." Li Jingjing spoke softly, then seemed to come to the realization of something, as she changed the topic saying, "Anyways, thank you, dad, mom, and me are all very happy."

Hearing the girl's gentle voice, Yang Chen sighed with relief, it seemed like this brat was also quick-witted. He laughed and said, "Is that so? Then it's all good, let your father continue doing his business, I'll come to chat with him tomorrow morning."

"Yep, understood."

"Is there anything else?" Yang Chen didn't mind chatting with Li Jingjing a little

longer, but as it gets late, there might be a traffic jam.

“Other things..... There’s nothing else.” Li Jingjing hesitated for a moment, and said, “I just want to know when big brother Yang is coming to the school to see me.”

Only now did Yang Chen remember agreeing to this matter, he couldn’t help but feel vexed by his own carelessness, and hurriedly said, “I’ve just started work this week, so I’m a little busy. However, I will definitely go during next week, don’t worry.”

Only with this did Li Jingjing happily agree, and put down the phone.

Just as Yang Chen was about to start the car, the phone rang again. This time, it was actually Wang Ma.

He was baffled as to why Wang Ma called him at such a time, as he had already mentioned that he was coming home for dinner. He picked up the phone and before he spoke a word, on the other side of the line, Wang Ma impatiently shouted—— “Young Master! Please hurry on back! Something big happened!!”

§

Publisher:

§

TooLate

From [doswap](#)

§